https://theses.gla.ac.uk/

Theses Digitisation:
https://www.gla.ac.uk/myglasgow/research/enlighten/theses/digitisation/
This is a digitised version of the original print thesis.

Copyright and moral rights for this work are retained by the author
A copy can be downloaded for personal non-commercial research or study, without prior permission or charge

This work cannot be reproduced or quoted extensively from without first obtaining permission in writing from the author

The content must not be changed in any way or sold commercially in any format or medium without the formal permission of the author

When referring to this work, full bibliographic details including the author, title, awarding institution and date of the thesis must be given

# Abstract Interpretation of Polymorphic Higher-Order Functions 

Gebreselassie Baraki

A Thesis submitted for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy at the Department of Computing Science, University of Glasgow February 1993
© Gebreselassie Baraki 1993

All rights reserved

## INFORMATION TO ALL USERS

The quality of this reproduction is dependent upon the quality of the copy submitted.
In the unlikely event that the author did not send a complete manuscript and there are missing pages, these will be noted. Also, if material had to be removed, a note will indicate the deletion.


ProQuest 10992239
Published by ProQuest LLC (2018). Copyright of the Dissertation is held by the Author.

All rights reserved.
This work is protected against unauthorized copying under Title 17, United States Code Microform Edition © ProQuest LLC.

ProQuest LLC.
789 East Eisenhower Parkway
P.O. Box 1346

Ann Arbor, MI 48106-1346

7hesis
9564
bospyl
GLasGow
LIBRARY


#### Abstract

This thesis describes several abstract interpretations of polymorphic functions. In all the interpretations, information about any instance of a polymorphic function is obtained from that of the smallest, thus avoiding the computation of the instance directly. This is useful in the case of recursive functions, because it avoids the expensive computation of finding fixed points of functionals corresponding to complex instances.

We define an explicitly typed polymorphic language with the Hindley-Milner type system to illustrate our ideas, and provide two semantics of polymorphism that relate separate instances of any polymorphic function. The choice of which semantics to use depends on the particular program analysis we want to study.

For studying strictness analysis and binding-time analysis, we introduce a semantics based on embedding-closure pairs. We see how the abstract function of the smallest instance of a polymorphic function is used in building an approximation to that of any instance. Furthermore, we extend the language to include lists, and describe both strictness analysis and binding-time analysis of lists. Thus, this work extends previous work by others, on analyses of polymorphic first-order functions and also of monomorphic higher-order functions, to polymorphic higher-order functions.

In relating distinct instances of a polymorphic function, the approximate abstract function is expressed as the greatest lower bound of a set of functions. This may not be very cheap to compute. However, there are often ways of obtaining the same result by considering a smaller set of functions. Another issue concerns how close the approximations are to the exact values. In the first-order case, it is shown that the approximate values coincide with the exact values. In general this is not the case, but experimental results on strictness analysis indicate that good approximations are obtained.

Embedding-projection pairs are used to provide a semantics that is convenient for termination analysis of polymorphic functions. We show that the abstract interpretation of an instance can be approximated by the least upper bound of a set of functions that are built from that of the smallest.


## Preface

The main results of the thesis deal with obtaining information about any instance of a polymorphic function from that of the smallest. In Chapter 1 we describe the problem and discuss related work. The mathematical terminology and concepts used in the thesis are given in Chapter 2, where the definitions and properties of some fairly well known structures are given.

In Chapter 3 we focus on those mathematical structures which we use to describe the semantics of polymorphic functions. In particular, we define the category of domains and embedding-closure pairs. This category and its subcategory of finite lattices are studied in some detail.

In Chapter 4 we introduce an explicitly typed polymorphic language, and define the semantic functions. Since our aim is to relate separate instances of any polymorphic function, embedding-closure pairs are used in Chapter 5 to establish such relationships.

In Chapter 6 we use a polymorphic language of abstract terms. Terms in the original language are translated into terms in this language. The values of the semantic functions on the abstract terms are the values of the abstract interpretation used in strictness analysis. Many of the results of the earlier chapter apply, and hence it is shown that the abstract interpretation of the smallest instance of a polymorphic function is used in building an approximation to that of any other instance. Therefore, computing complex instances directly may be avoided.

Strictness analysis of lists is discussed in Chapter 7. We show that the methods of the previous chapter also apply for polymorphic functions defined on lists. In Chapter 8, we show that the same results apply to the abstract interpretation used in bindingtime analysis. Finally, we discuss termination analysis, where embedding-projection pairs are used instead.

In the last chapter, we give a summary of results and also discuss some problems. We also give the proofs of some propositions stated in the main body in the appendices.

## Acknowledgements

I would like to thank my supervisor John Hughes for his help and encouragement. It was through his lectures that I was first introduced to abstract interpretation. Since his move to Sweden in the summer of 1992, John Launchbury took over as supervisor and I have had many enjoyable discussions with him. I am very grateful for his help during this period.

I am also grateful to many people in the department who helped me in many ways. In particular, I would like to thank Kieran Clenaghan, Phil Trinder, Keith van Rijsbergen, and Phil Wadler. Phil Trinder also read some parts of the thesis and made useful comments. My examiners, Geoffrey Burn and Phil Wadler, pointed out errors and suggested improvements for which I am grateful.

I would also like to thank Julian Seward of Manchester University for the discussions we have had in connection with strictness analysis of polymorphic functions. His implementation of the method proposed in this thesis enabled me to evaluate it, and also to debug some of the theory.

Many friends have been very supportive over the years. In particular, I would like to express my gratitude to Ruben Leon, Elizabeth Baker, Mary and Tesfay Waldemichael, and Anna and Tesfu Gessesse.

Finally, the financial support of Addis Ababa University and the UNDP is gratefully acknowledged.

## Contents

Abstract ..... i
Preface ..... ii
Acknowledgements ..... iii
1 Background ..... 1
1.1 Abstract Interpretation ..... 2
1.1.1 First-Order Functions ..... 5
1.1.2 Higher-Order Functions ..... 8
1.1.3 Data Structures ..... 12
1.2 Polymorphism ..... 14
1.2.1 Semantics ..... 15
1.2.2 First-Order Functions ..... 18
1.2.3 Semantic Polymorphic Invariance ..... 19
1.3 The Main Problem and a Solution ..... 19
1.4 Other Approaches to Strictness Analysis ..... 20
1.4.1 Projections ..... 20
1.4.2 Strictness Analysis by Type Inference ..... 22
2 Some Mathematical Structures ..... 24
2.1 Partial Orders ..... 24
2.2 Constructions ..... 26
2.3 Scott Topology and Powerdomains ..... 26
2.4 Complete Lattices and Fixed Points ..... 28
2.5 Categories ..... 29
3 Lax Natural Transformations ..... 31
3.1 Embedding-Closure Pairs ..... 31
3.1.1 Functors on $\left(\mathcal{C}^{e c}\right)^{n}$ ..... 33
3.1.2 Lax Natural Transformations between Functors ..... 34
3.2 Finite Lattices and Embedding-Closure Pairs ..... 36
3.2.1 First-Order Type Functors ..... 38
3.2.2 Some Special Transformations ..... 42
3.3 Embedding-Projection Pairs ..... 43
3.3.1 Functors on $\left(\mathcal{C}^{e p}\right)^{n}$ ..... 44
3.3.2 Lax Natural Transformations between Functors on $\left(\mathcal{C}^{e p}\right)^{n}$ ..... 44
3.4 Finite Lattices and Embedding-Projection Pairs ..... 45
3.4.1 First-Order Type Functors ..... 46
3.4.2 A Special Transformation ..... 47
4 Semantics of a Polymorphic Language ..... 48
4.1 Introduction ..... 48
4.2 Syntax ..... 49
4.2.1 Type Expressions ..... 49
4.2.2 Terms ..... 50
4.2.3 Type Checking Rules ..... 51
4.3 Semantics ..... 53
4.3.1 Semantics of Types ..... 53
4.3.2 Semantics of Terms ..... 54
4.4 Summary ..... 56
5 Relational Semantics ..... 57
5.1 Introduction ..... 57
5.2 The Representation Theorem ..... 58
5.3 Implications of the Theorem ..... 61
5.4 Polymorphic Functions as Lax Transformations ..... 62
5.4.1 Type Constructors as Functors ..... 63
5.4.2 Polymorphic Functions ..... 64
5.4.3 The First-Order Case ..... 66
5.5 Semantic Polymorphic Invariance ..... 66
5.6 Summary ..... 67
6 Strictness Analysis ..... 68
6.1 Introduction ..... 68
6.2 Abstraction of Types ..... 69
6.3 Abstract Functions ..... 70
6.4 Abstract Interpretation ..... 71
6.4.1 A Language for Abstract Interpretation ..... 71
6.4.2 Semantics of $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$ ..... 72
6.4.3 Connection between $\mathcal{L}$ and $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$ ..... 73
6.5 Safety ..... 74
6.6 Polymorphic Functions ..... 75
6.7 Monomorphic Functions ..... 79
6.8 Summary ..... 81
7 Analysis of Lists ..... 83
7.1 Introduction ..... 83
7.2 Strictness Properties ..... 84
7.3 Abstract Interpretation ..... 86
7.3.1 Nielson and Nielson's Approach ..... 86
7.3.2 Comparison of $L(A)$ with Wadler's Domains ..... 87
7.3.3 Some Operations on Lists ..... 88
7.3.4 Strictness Analysis and Safety ..... 90
7.3.5 An Example ..... 96
7.4 Polymorphic Functions ..... 97
7.4.1 $\quad L$ as a functor on $\mathcal{A}^{e c}$ ..... 97
7.4.2 Some Lax Natural Transformations ..... 101
7.5 Implementation ..... 104
7.6 Semantic Polymorphic Invariance ..... 106
8 Further Applications ..... 110
8.1 Binding-Time Analysis ..... 110
8.1.1 Higher-Order Functions ..... 111
8.1.2 Interpretation of Terms ..... 111
8.1.3 Polymorphism ..... 113
8.1.4 Lists ..... 114
8.2 Termination Analysis ..... 119
9 Conclusion ..... 122
A The Representation Theorem ..... 125
B The Safety Condition ..... 130

## Chapter 1

## Background

The use of lazy functional programming languages as a convenient tool for software development has been strongly advocated [19]. The presence of laziness and higherorder functions allows the use of infinite data structures and greater modularity at the programming level. At the logical level, the absence of side-effects makes it easier to reason about programs. However, there are problems regarding the efficiency of their implementations. Efficient implementations of these languages rely on static program analysis. One such, which is considered to be important, is strictness analysis.

A function is said to be strict if it returns a non-terminating value for a nonterminating argument. If a function is strict, arguments may be passed by value instead of the less efficient evaluation mechanism call-by-need. This enables more efficient code to be generated. Moreover, parallel implementations may make use of strictness information of functions of several variables: if a function is known to be strict with respect to several arguments then its application can be computed by evaluating the expressions at such argument positions in parallel [13].

The two most important aspects of strictness analysis are: first, the development of algorithms which detect the strictness of functions, and secondly, a proof of correctness that such algorithms indeed give correct results. When one evaluation mechanism is to be used instead of another for efficiency reasons, it is necessary to ensure that both evaluation mechanisms give the same result. It is for this reason
that we need proofs of correctness.
Over the last decade several techniques for strictness analysis of functional programs have been developed. There are essentially three approaches :

- abstract interpretation
- projection-based analysis
- type inference

In the following sections, an introductory survey of work on abstract interpretation is presented. Emphasis is given to this approach because the thesis is mainly about abstract interpretation. Issues concerning higher-order functions, data structures and polymorphism are covered in some detail. The main contribution of this thesis is with regard to polymorphic functions; the central problem addressed is discussed in the section on polymorphism. A summary of the discussion and an introduction to the proposed solution are given in the third section of this chapter. In the last section of this chapter, a very short introduction to the other approaches is also given.

Most of the mathematical structures and their properties used in this chapter are fairly standard and simple. In any case, the mathematical background required in the entire thesis is given in the next two chapters.

### 1.1 Abstract Interpretation

There are numerous everyday examples of when one is interested in partial information about the result of a computation. To obtain partial information it may not be necessary to perform the whole computation. For example, to determine the sign of the product $(-694) * 453$, one could first do the multiplication and then inspect the sign of the result. But since it is the product of a negative and a positive number, the result will always be negative, so the precise computation is superfluous.

In practice, these kinds of things are done without bothering about any formal justification of the process. However, it is desirable to view it as a special case of a very general procedure of deriving certain properties of computations without doing the actual computations. A formal development of the process is therefore necessary.

Returning to the example of multiplication, which is also one of the examples given in [3, 12] , an operation on the set of possible sign of numbers is defined. Integers have three possible signs-positive, negative and neutral (or sign of zero), and they are respectively denoted by $(+),(-)$ and (0) as in [37]. The operation on $\{(+),(-),(0)\}$ is given by the table below.

| $*^{\#}$ | $(+)$ | $(-)$ | $(0)$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $(+)$ | $(+)$ | $(-)$ | $(0)$ |
| $(-)$ | $(-)$ | $(+)$ | $(0)$ |
| $(0)$ | $(0)$ | $(0)$ | $(0)$ |

This operation may be regarded as an "abstract multiplication". As far as signs are concerned $*^{\#}$ models $*$, where the latter denotes multiplication.

A formal description is then given by first defining an abstraction map

$$
\text { abs }: \text { Integers } \rightarrow\{(+),(-),(0)\}
$$

This map is the function that returns the sign of its argument. It is now easy to show that the diagram below commutes.


This means that for any integers $x$ and $y$ :

$$
a b s(x * y)=(a b s x) *^{\#}(a b s y)
$$

Therefore, the sign of a product of numbers is obtained by applying *\# to the signs of the numbers.

If addition were to be considered instead, the set of signs would not be closed under the corresponding abstract function. For example, the sign of the sum of a negative and a positive number depends on the magnitudes of the numbers. Therefore, a new element $( \pm)$ is added to the set. In this context, $( \pm)$ denotes the property of being an integer (including 0 ).

In defining $+^{\#},(0)$ is its identity, and $x+^{\#} y=( \pm)$ whenever $x$ is $(-)$ and $y$ is $(+)$ or vice-versa, or when one of them is $( \pm)$. Completing the definition is fairly straightforward. Thus a table for $+^{\#}$, similar to that of $*^{\#}$, is obtained. However, the diagram corresponding to + \# does not commute because the sign of of the sum of two numbers is not entirely determined by the signs of the numbers.

To regain some aspects of a commuting diagram it is convenient to introduce an ordering on $\{(+),(-),(0),( \pm)\}$, where $x \sqsubseteq( \pm)$ for every $x$. An intuitive meaning of the statement $x \sqsubseteq y$ is that if a number has the sign $x$ then it is safe to assume that it has sign $y$. It is now easy to see that the following statement holds.

$$
a b s(x+y) \sqsubseteq(a b s x)+^{\#}(a b s y)
$$

Unlike the previous case, some of the information obtained from computing on the finite set is not exact. However, it is always safe, i.e, it does not give wrong information. Whenever it is impossible to obtain exact information, the ordering on the finite set makes it possible to obtain approximate values.

Our aim is to study languages in which it is possible to express a variety of operations. Now, depending on the property to be investigated, abstract versions of operations are defined. Interpreting these abstract operations to determine certain properties of programs is called abstract interpretation. An essential feature of many program analyses by abstract interpretation is that the abstract versions (or abstract functions) are interpreted over finite domains and therefore there are no infinite loops during their evaluation.

### 1.1.1 First-Order Functions

Mycroft was the first to use abstract interpretation for strictness analysis of a language of first-order recursion equations on flat domains [37]. Flat domains are simple to deal with because a value in a flat domain denotes either a non-terminating computation or a total one.

If $f$ is a function of one variable then its standard interpretation (or semantics) is given by some continuous function

$$
f: D \rightarrow D
$$

where $D$ is some flat domain. In [37] $f$ is also given an abstract (non-standard) interpretation which is a continuous function on the two-element lattice 2 (= $\{0,1\}$ with $0 \sqsubseteq 1$ )

$$
f^{\#}: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow \mathbf{2}
$$

The two interpretations are related by an important safety condition; whenever $f^{\#} 0=0$ it is always the case that $f \perp=\perp$, i.e, $f$ is strict. Therefore, it is sufficient to check for $f^{\#} 0=0$ to conclude that the original function is strict. It is important, however, to note that there are examples of strict functions where $f^{\#} 0 \neq 0$.

The non-standard interpretation of a term e, that is denoted by $e^{\#}$, is defined by induction on the structure of $e$ as follows :
(i) if e is an integer or a boolean constant then $\mathrm{e}^{\#}=1$
(ii) if $e$ is of the form e1 ope2, where op is one of the usual binary operators + , ,$- *$ and $/$, then $e^{\#}=e_{1}^{\#} \wedge e_{2}^{\#}$
(iii) if $e$ is if $b$ e2 e3 then $e^{\#}=b^{\#} \wedge\left(e 2^{\#} \vee e 3^{\#}\right)$

The operations $\wedge$ and $\vee$ have the usual boolean algebra interpretations, i.e, conjunction and disjunction respectively, where 0 is treated as False and 1 is treated as True.

Consider the example

$$
f x=x+6
$$

It can be shown that $f^{\#} x=x$. Therefore, $f^{\#} 0=0$ and hence $f$ is strict.

Suppose $f$ is a recursive function defined by something of the form

$$
f x=\text {. . . } f(\text {. . . ) . . . }
$$

To obtain the abstract interpretation of $f$, a sequence of monotonic functions $\left\{f_{i}^{\#}\right\}$ is defined where $f_{0}^{\#}$ is the constant function that always returns 0 , and each $f_{i+1}^{\#}$ is defined to be the function obtained using $f_{i}^{\#}$ in the right hand side of the definition of the function. Since the functions are interpreted on a finite domain, there is an $i$ beyond which no new functions are obtained. Then, $f_{i}^{\#}$ is taken to be the abstract interpretation of $f$. Obtaining this $f_{i}^{\#}$ requires an iteration with a test for equality at each step. It must be noted that checking the equality of functions is an expensive operation.

Normally, a function is represented by the set of all its argument-result pairs. To check the equality of functions, their corresponding representations are compared. To make this operation more efficient, Clack and Peyton Jones [12] introduce a more compact representation of monotonic functions. For example, if a monotonic function $g: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow \mathbf{2}$ maps 0 to 1 , it clearly also maps 1 to 1 . Hence, $\{(0,1)\}$, or simply $\{0\}$, may be taken as its representation. This is in some sense the "minimal" set of points mapped to 1 by $g$. The other points can be determined from the monotonicity of the function. On the other hand, it is possible to represent the function in terms of points mapped to 0 . Such sets, which are called frontiers, were introduced and used in algorithms developed by Clack and Peyton Jones. The correspondence of frontiers with open sets, and also with closed sets, in the topology which arises from the lattice structure was explored by Hunt [24]. Using these new representations, Hunt and Hankin [25] present algorithms for computing fixed points of functionals; their method applies to higher-order functions as well.

If $f$ is a function of $n$ variables, Mycroft defines the abstract interpretation to be some function $f^{\#}: \mathbf{2}^{n} \rightarrow \mathbf{2}$. He showed that if $f^{\#}(1, \ldots, 1,0,1, \ldots, 1)=0$, where the 0 in the $n$-tuple is in the $k$-th position, then the function is strict in its $k$-th argument.

Consider the recursive function $f$ given by

$$
f(x, y, z)=\text { if } x=0 \text { then } y-1 \text { else } f((x-1), z, y)
$$

Now, it is easy to show that we need to interpret the function $\mathrm{f}^{\#}: \mathbf{2}^{3} \rightarrow \mathbf{2}$, where
$f^{\#}(x, y, z)=x \wedge\left(y \vee f^{\#}(x, z, y)\right)$. The necessary iterates are tabulated below.

|  | $f_{0}^{\#}$ | $f_{1}^{\#}$ | $f_{2}^{\#}$ | $f_{3}^{\#}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $(0,0,0)$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| $(0,0,1)$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| $(0,1,0)$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| $(0,1,1)$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| $(1,0,0)$ | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| $(1,0,1)$ | 0 | 0 | 1 | 1 |
| $(1,1,0)$ | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 |
| $(1,1,1)$ | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 |

Since $f_{2}^{\#}=f_{3}^{\#}, f_{i}^{\#}=f_{2}^{\#}$ for every $i \geq 2$. Therefore, $f_{2}^{\#}$ is taken to be $f^{\#}$. Since $f^{\#}(0,1,1)=0 f$ is strict in its first argument. Both $f^{\#}(1,0,1)$ and $f^{\#}(1,1,0)$ are different from 0 , hence it is not known whether or not the function is strict in its second or third argument.

Normally, a program has a set of function definitions $\left\{\mathrm{f}_{j}\right\}$. Strictness analysis is done by starting with a family $\left\{f_{j, 0}^{\#}\right\}$, where for each $j, f_{j, 0}^{\#}$ is the constant function .that returns 0 . The collection $\left\{f_{j, i+1}^{\#}\right\}$ is then defined in terms of $\left\{f_{j, i}^{\#}\right\}$ in a way similar to the example above. For each iteration, tests for equality have to be done. If the program contains $n$ function definitions, performing $n$ tests, that is checking if $f_{j, i+1}^{\#}=f_{j, i}^{\#}$ for each $j$, is expensive. But if one test shows the inequality of a pair, then one more iteration is performed. A more efficient way of doing this analysis would be to divide the call graph into strongly-connected components. A worrying problem is that, even in the case of a single function this process could be expensive.

There is an obvious parallel between this treatment and the rule of signs. In the case of addition and the rule of signs $(+)$ denotes all positive integers, and $( \pm)$ denotes all integers. Here, 0 stands for non-terminating terms and 1 denotes all terms. However, the abstraction map from $D$ to 2 is not yet explicitly defined. In the next section, the definition and properties of the map in the context of a language with higher-order functions is provided.

### 1.1.2 Higher-Order Functions

A language with higher-order functions that has been studied extensively is the simply typed $\lambda$-calculus. In the case of the pure simply typed $\lambda$-calculus, it would not be necessary to perform strictness analysis. It may be reasonable to talk about strictness of a function in the sense that a function is strict if it needs to evaluate its argument. But no non-terminating computation can be expressed in this language-it is strongly normalisable. However, when the language is extended to allow recursion and some constants are introduced, this property no longer holds.

Mycroft's work was extended to such a language by Burn et al [11]. Below, a summary of their work is presented; from now on, we shall refer to this as BHAstyle abstract interpretation. A detailed account of abstract interpretation of such languages may be found in a book by Burn [10].

Type expressions are given by the syntax

$$
\sigma::=A \mid \sigma \rightarrow \sigma
$$

where $A$ is a base type.
Terms are given by the grammar :

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \text { e ::= } \quad c^{\alpha} \\
& 1 \mathrm{x}^{\alpha} \\
& \mid \lambda \mathrm{x}^{\alpha} \text {.e } \\
& \mid e_{1} e_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

An interpretation of a language is a set-up where there is a family of domains $\left\{D_{\sigma}\right\}$, indexed by the type expressions, and an assignment of values $c$ in $D_{\sigma}$ for constants $c^{\sigma}$. This is normally done by starting with a domain $D_{A}$ corresponding to the base type $A$, and then $D_{\sigma \rightarrow \tau}$ is defined by induction, to be the set of all continuous functions from $D_{\sigma}$ to $D_{\tau}$. This is sometimes written as $D_{\sigma} \rightarrow D_{\tau}$. Interpretations of this kind are called domain-theoretic interpretations. Domains are preferred to sets so that the fixed-point combinator $Y^{\alpha}$ is given a meaning.

As described in [4], any interpretation induces a semantic function. To see how
this function is defined, first $D$ is let to be the union of the family of domains in the interpretation. Suppose $\mathbf{K}:$ constants $\rightarrow D$ is the function (given in the interpretation) that assigns values to the constants of the language. Then, the semantic function

$$
\text { sem }: \operatorname{Exp} \rightarrow E n v \rightarrow D
$$

where, $E x p$ is the set of expressions, and $E n v$ is the set of all partial functions from the set of variables to values, is defined as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{sem}\left(\mathrm{c}^{\alpha}\right) \rho & =\mathbf{K}\left(\mathrm{c}^{\alpha}\right) \\
\operatorname{sem}\left(\mathrm{x}^{\alpha}\right) \rho & =\rho\left(\mathrm{x}^{\alpha}\right) \\
\operatorname{sem}\left(\lambda \mathbf{x}^{\alpha} \cdot \mathrm{e}\right) \rho & =\lambda y^{\alpha} \cdot\left(\operatorname{sem}(\mathrm{e}) \rho\left[y^{\alpha} / \mathrm{x}^{\alpha}\right]\right) \\
\operatorname{sem}\left(\mathrm{e}_{1} \mathrm{e}_{2}\right) \rho & =\left(\operatorname{sem}\left(\mathrm{e}_{1}\right) \rho\right)\left(\operatorname{sem}\left(\mathrm{e}_{2}\right) \rho\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Depending on the applications in mind, several interpretations may be defined for a language. Here, however, strictness analysis is the application under consideration. Thus, only two interpretations are considered. The first interpretation is the one that provides the standard semantics of the language, and the second is an abstract interpretation. If $\mathbf{K}$ assigns the constants their standard interpretations, then the resulting semantic function gives the usual denotational semantics of the language. It is important to note that if ${ }^{\alpha}$ and $Y^{\alpha}$ are two of the constants, and their standard interpretations are given by

$$
\mathbf{K}\left(\text { if }^{\alpha}\right) x y z= \begin{cases}\perp & \text { if } x=\perp \\ y & \text { if } x=\text { True } \\ z & \text { if } x=\text { False }\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
\mathbf{K}\left(\mathrm{Y}^{\alpha}\right)=\lambda f^{\alpha \rightarrow \alpha} \cdot \bigsqcup f^{n}(\perp)
$$

In the case of the abstract interpretation, the domains are denoted by $B_{\sigma}$, where $B_{A}$ is the two-element domain 2. Since $B_{A}$ is a lattice, $B_{\sigma}$ is also a lattice for every type $\sigma$. Since all these lattices are finite they are complete, and hence Tarski's theorem may be applied to them [49]; that is, monotonic functions have fixed points.

To complete the definition of the abstract interpretation, it is necessary to assign values to the constants in the language. For example, the conditional, if ${ }^{A}$, is assigned the value $i f^{\#}$ defined by :

$$
i f^{\#} x y z= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } x=0 \\ y \sqcup z & \text { if } x=1\end{cases}
$$

The values corresponding to the usual arithmetic operators and constants are the same as in the previous section. Now, the abstract interpretation induces a semantic function in exactly the same way as the standard interpretation. To distinguish this semantics from the previous one, it is sometimes called a non-standard semantics or simply abstract interpretation. For any function $f$ in a program, its standard and non-standard semantics are again denoted by $f$ and $f^{\#}$ respectively.

Obviously, it is necessary to establish a connection between the two semantics. Now, if f is a function of type $\sigma_{1} \rightarrow \ldots \rightarrow \sigma_{n} \rightarrow A$, then whenever $f^{\#} 1_{\sigma_{1}} \ldots .0_{\sigma_{k}} . .1_{\sigma_{n}}=$ 0 , it is also the case that $f x_{1} \ldots \perp_{k} \ldots x_{n}=\perp$ for all $x_{i}$ in $D_{\sigma_{i}}$. Thus the strictness of the abstract interpretation in the $k$-th argument implies that of the standard interpretation. The points $0_{\sigma_{i}}$ and $1_{\sigma_{i}}$ stand for the least and greatest elements of the lattice $B_{\sigma_{i}}$ respectively.

One of the most important contributions of the work reported in [11] is the mathematical machinery developed to show that the analysis is sound. To prove soundness, a relationship between the two interpretations is first established. This is is done by defining abstraction functions $a b s_{\sigma}$, for each type $\sigma$, from $D_{\sigma}$ to $B_{\sigma}$. Then these functions are used to relate sem and asem, where asem is the abstract interpretation. The following diagram may be helpful in trying to see what is going on.


The abstraction functions are defined by induction on the structure of types. In the case of the base type $A$, it has the same definition as the function $H A L T$ that was given by Mycroft in [37]. That is,

$$
a b s_{A}(d)= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } d=\perp \\ 1 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

## Abstracting Functions

One way of dealing with the higher-order case is to use Hoare powerdomains in the definition

$$
a b s_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta}(f) b=\bigsqcup\left(\mathbf{P}\left(a b s_{\beta}\right)\left(\mathbf{P}(f)\left(\operatorname{Conc}_{\alpha}\left(b^{\downarrow}\right)\right)\right)\right),
$$

where $\mathbf{P}$ is the functor that maps domains $D$ to their corresponding Hoare powerdomains $\mathbf{P}(D)$, and any function $f$ to $\mathbf{P}(f)$. The function $\mathbf{P}(f)$ takes any closed subset $X$ of $D$ and returns $f(X)^{\downarrow}$-the closure of the set of images of elements of $X$ under $f$, and $b^{\downarrow}$ is the closure of $\{b\}$. The function Conc $_{\alpha}$ is also defined on sets and it is the inverse image $a b s_{\alpha}^{-1}$, i.e, it takes any set $Y$ into $\left\{x \in D \mid a b s_{\alpha}(x) \in Y\right\}$. Since $a b s_{\alpha}$ is continuous, $\operatorname{Conc}_{\alpha}(Y)$ is closed for every closed set $Y$. An equivalent definition, which does not explicitly use powerdomains, was given by Abramsky [4].

$$
a b s_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta}(f) b=\bigsqcup\left\{a b s_{\beta}(f(d)) \mid a b s_{\alpha}(d) \sqsubseteq b\right\}
$$

In the abstract interpretation being described, elements of lattices represent information about values. Moreover, if $a$ and $b$ are in a lattice and $a \sqsubseteq b$ then $a$ is more
informative than $b$. The motivation underlying the definition of $a b s_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta}(f)$ above, is that if $b$ is some information that is known about (or a property of) an argument of $f$, then to find some information about the result of $f$, first the results of $f$ at all arguments that we know more than $b$ about are considered. Finally, we approximate the information across all the results.

Two important properties of the abstraction functions are the fact that they are both strict and $\perp$-reflecting (only $\perp$ is mapped to $\perp$ ). Moreover, when $f$ and $d$ are of the appropriate types, the following semi-homomorphism property holds

$$
a b s_{\tau}(f d) \sqsubseteq a b s_{\sigma \rightarrow \tau}(f) a b s_{\sigma}(d) .
$$

A simplified version of a lemma in [11] is that if e is a closed term of type $\alpha$ then $a b s_{\alpha}(\operatorname{sem}(\mathrm{e})) \rho \sqsubseteq \operatorname{tabs}(\mathrm{e}) \rho^{\prime}$. In particular, if the functions $f$ and $f^{\#}$ denote the corresponding interpretations then

$$
a b s_{\sigma \rightarrow \tau}(f) \sqsubseteq f^{\#}
$$

It is from these facts that the soundness theorem for strictness analysis follows. In the case of a function of one variable, for example, if $f^{\#} 0=0$ then the proof of the strictness of $f$ is given by :

$$
\begin{aligned}
a b s_{\tau}(f \perp) & \sqsubseteq a b s_{\sigma \rightarrow \tau}(f)\left(a b s_{\sigma}(\perp)\right) \\
& =a b s_{\sigma \rightarrow \tau}(f)(0) \\
& \sqsubseteq f^{\#} 0 \\
& =0
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore,

$$
a b s_{\tau}(f \perp)=0 .
$$

Since $a b s_{\tau}$ is $\perp$-reflecting, $f \perp=\perp$.

### 1.1.3 Data Structures

Although Mycroft's method can be used in the analysis of data structures, the result it gives is too weak to be of practical significance. If a function's argument
is a list, then there are several levels in the way the function may use its argument. To illustrate this, we look at some examples given by Wadler [52]. Consider the functions isempty, length and sum defined by

```
isempty nil = True
isempty (cons x xs) = False
length nil = 0
length (cons x xs) = 1 + length xs
sum nil = 0
sum (cons x xs) = x + sum xs
```

It is not difficult to observe that the extent to which these functions have to evaluate their arguments varies. Wadler introduced a set whose elements model these differences [52]. He used the abstract domain $\left\{\perp, \infty, \perp_{\epsilon}, \top_{\epsilon}\right\}$. The ordering is as given in the diagram below.


Notice that the notation uses $\perp$ and $T$ instead of 0 and 1 of the previous sections.
Wadler first provided a table representing cons\#, i.e, the function from
$\mathbf{2} \times\left\{\perp, \infty, \perp_{\epsilon}, T_{\epsilon}\right\}$ to $\left\{\perp, \infty, \perp_{\epsilon}, T_{\epsilon}\right\}$ that models the behaviour of cons. In addition, he also defined $n i l^{\#}=T_{\epsilon}$. Now, if $h$ is the function defined by

```
h nil = a
h (cons x xs) = f x xs
```

then $h^{\#}$ (Wadler's abstract interpretation of $h$ ) is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
h^{\#} T_{\epsilon} & =a^{\#} \sqcup\left(f^{\#} \top T_{\epsilon}\right) \\
h^{\#} \perp_{\epsilon} & =\left(f^{\#} \perp T_{\epsilon}\right) \sqcup\left(f^{\#} \top \perp_{\epsilon}\right) \\
h^{\#} \infty & =f^{\#} T \infty \\
h^{\#} \perp & =\perp
\end{aligned}
$$

The results of the abstract interpretation are to be understood as follows :
(i) If $h^{\#} \perp=\perp$ then it is safe to evaluate its argument to expose the first cons or nil.
(ii) If $h^{\#} \infty=\perp$ then it is safe to evaluate its argument and all the tails recursively.
(iii) If $h^{\#} \perp_{\epsilon}=\perp$ then it safe to evaluate its argument and recursively all the tails and heads.

Returning to the examples at the beginning of the section, it is not difficult to see that isempty, length and sum have properties (i), (ii) and (iii) respectively.

What we have seen so far works for lists of integers, and more generally for lists over any flat domain. Wadler also showed how to build the abstract domains appropriate for lists of arbitrary types, and also described the abstract interpretation of functions defined on lists of lists of integers as examples. We will return to this in more detail in Chapter 7.

### 1.2 Polymorphism

Most functional languages have polymorphic type systems of some kind. Monomorphic instances of any polymorphic function can be analysed by the methods described earlier. However, different instances of a polymorphic function have similar strictness properties. For instance, Abramsky has shown that abstract interpretation-based strictness analysis of a language with the Hindley-Milner type
system is polymorphically invariant [1]. This means that the analysis can detect the strictness of one instance of a polymorphic function if and only if it can detect the strictness of all instances. Therefore, it is claimed that it is sufficient to deal with the smallest instance of a polymorphic function. It must be said that this applies to a specific technique. The moment one decides to use a different analysis technique it is necessary to check if polymorphic invariance still holds.

If different instances of a polymorphic function are called at many points in a program, polymorphic invariance may not be very useful. To obtain as much information as possible, it is necessary to compute the abstract functions of all these instances. To see this consider the following example. Let

```
f x y = if x = 0 then y else f ( }\textrm{x}-1)\textrm{y
```

The abstract interpretation of the smallest instance of $f$ is a function in $2 \rightarrow \mathbf{2} \rightarrow \mathbf{2}$, and it may be given by a table. Now, consider the function $g$ given by

```
g x = fst (f 0 x)
```

where fst is the function which takes a pair and returns the first argument. To compute the abstract interpretation of $g$, we need that of some instance of $f$. This instance of $f$, however, is not the smallest one. Therefore, the table mentioned earlier will not be of any use here. Thus, we need to build another table for the appropriate instance. Clearly, computing the abstract functions of all instances used in a program is inefficient. What is desirable is to use the information obtained from one instance to study properties of other instances. In order to do this, it is helpful to establish a relationship between the semantics of all instances of a polymorphic function.

### 1.2.1 Semantics

A very simple way of looking at the semantics of a polymorphic function is to regard it as a mere collection of continuous functions where each continuous function corresponds to a monomorphic instance. This view does not express any relationship
between the instances. But the function bodies of all the instances of a polymorphic function are essentially the same. The similarity at the syntactic level should certainly imply some semantic relationship between the different instances. Before dealing with polymorphic functions, it is useful to consider some semantic properties of terms in the simply typed $\lambda$-calculus.

## $\lambda$-definability

Plotkin establishes some semantic properties that must hold about terms definable in the simply typed $\lambda$-calculus [40]. To see what these properties are, first assume that there is only one base type $A$. The full type hierarchy (or full set-theoretic interpretation), which is a collection $\left\{X_{\sigma}\right\}$ of sets is then defined by induction on types. This is done by starting with some non-empty set $X$ that is taken to be $X_{A}$. For any higher type $\alpha \rightarrow \beta, X_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta}$ is defined to be the set of all functions from $X_{\alpha}$ to $X_{\beta}$. Now, any closed term of the typed $\lambda$-calculus may be interpreted by assigning it a value (in a way similar to what sem does in the previous section) from the set of the appropriate type. Plotkin reports that such values satisfy certain uniformity conditions (see also Coquand [14]). To express this, consider any permutation (bijection) $\pi_{A}: X_{A} \rightarrow X_{A}$. Then for each type $\alpha \rightarrow \beta, \pi_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta}: X_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta} \rightarrow X_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta}$ is defined by induction as

$$
\pi_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta}(f)=\pi_{\beta} \circ f \circ \pi_{\alpha}^{-1}
$$

Here, $\pi_{\alpha}^{-1}$ is the inverse of the permutation $\pi_{\alpha}$ which obviously is itself a permutation. It is also easy to see that $\pi_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta}$ is a permutation.

The invariance condition that definable terms satisfy is that, if $f$ denotes some closed term of type $\sigma$ then $\pi_{\sigma}(f)=f$. It is important to emphasise that so far this property is only stated and holds for the pure system. If the system is extended to include constants of type $A$, then the invariance holds provided some restrictions are made to the definition of $\pi_{A}$-it is let to be an identity on the constants.

The invariance described here is only a necessary condition; there are objects not definable in the language which have this property. The equality operation $=$ is an example, which was given by Plotkin, that is invariant under the appropriate permutations, but is not definable in the pure system.

## Logical relations

In an attempt to give a better characterisation of the definable objects Plotkin introduced a semantics based on relations. To do this a collection of relations $\left\{R_{\sigma}\right\}$, known as logical relations, is defined. This is done by starting with any relation $R_{A}$ corresponding to the base type $A$, and then defining $R_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta}$ by

$$
(f, g) \in R_{\alpha \rightarrow \beta} \text { if and only if for all }(x, y) \in R_{\alpha}:(f(x), g(y)) \in R_{\beta}
$$

Now, the invariance theorem stated in terms of relations is that if $f$ denotes some closed term of type $\sigma$ then $(f, f) \in R_{\sigma}$. This is true for all logical relations. This theorem is stronger than the invariance theorem involving permutations; in fact it is possible to show that the permutations generate logical relations, but not all logical relations are generated by permutations. These invariance results are about the simply typed $\lambda$-calculus.

The relational approach was also used by Reynolds to study terms written in an extended typed $\lambda$-calculus [43] . The extension was made by allowing expressions of the form lettype $\tau=\sigma$ in e , where $\tau$ is a type variable and $\sigma$ is a type expression. Reynolds's abstraction theorem establishes a relationship between the values of lettype-expressions with different $\sigma$ 's. Such expressions may be regarded as instances of some polymorphic term.

The category of domains and embedding-projection pairs was used to present a model of the polymorphic (second-order) $\lambda$-calculus by Coquand et al [15]. The language does not allow recursive definitions. In this thesis we take a similar approach except that, for reasons to be explained in future chapters, in the strictness analysis of polymorphic functions it is convenient to use the category of domains and embedding-closure pairs instead (see also Baraki [6]).

Wadler also used the relational approach to derive theorems about polymorphic functions definable in the polymorphic $\lambda$-calculus [53]. Types are interpreted as relations and closed terms satisfy conditions similar to those involving logical relations in [40] in the simply typed $\lambda$-calculus. Concentrating on relations that arise out of functions, equations involving different instances of polymorphic functions are obtained. These equations are the theorems. Wadler also shows that the language
can be extended by adding fixpoints, but then similar theorems only hold if certain restrictions are imposed on the kind of relations used.

### 1.2.2 First-Order Functions

Hughes investigated an abstract interpretation of polymorphic first-order functions [21]. He showed how monotypes could be interpreted as domains and type constructors as functors in the category of domains and strict functions. In this framework, it was shown that polymorphic functions are natural transformations. The components of the natural transformation, corresponding to a polymorphic function, are the semantics of monomorphic instances of the polymorphic function. Thus any two instances are related in a certain manner. Such relationships are used in establishing relationships between abstract interpretations of different instances of a polymorphic function.

For example, let $F(t)$ and $G(t)$ be parameterised types and $f$ be the natural transformation from $F$ to $G$ which is the semantics of some polymorphic function f . Then for any domains $A$ and $B$, if $\alpha: A \rightarrow B$ is a strict function then

$$
G(\alpha) \circ f_{A}=f_{B} \circ F(\alpha)
$$

Moreover, Hughes also showed that for any type $\tau$, there is a term $E(f)$ such that

$$
f_{A b s \tau}=E\left(f_{2}\right)
$$

Assuming that int and bool as the only basic types, $A b s \tau$ is the type obtained from $\tau$ by substituting the occurrence of these basic types by 2 . It was then shown that

$$
f_{\tau}^{\#} \sqsubseteq E^{\prime}\left(f_{2}^{\#}\right)
$$

where $E^{\prime}$ is obtained from $E$ by replacing the terms by their abstract values. Thus, once $f_{2}^{\#}$ is computed, $E^{\prime}\left(f_{2}^{\#}\right)$ provides an approximation to $f_{\tau}^{\#}$.

The difficulty with the higher-order case comes from the contravariance of the function type constructor in its first argument.

### 1.2.3 Semantic Polymorphic Invariance

A result more powerful than the polymorphic invariance of strictness analysis was recently proved by Abramsky and Jensen [5]. They showed the semantic polymorphic invariance of strictness for a higher-order language. That is, an instance of a polymorphic function is strict if and only if all instances are. To do this, they use the notion of a relator. A relator is a mapping that is defined in a similar way as a functor but is not required to preserve composition. In this application, transformations are collections of functions which may also be viewed as relations satisfying a condition weaker than naturality. Using relators and transformations, they gave a semantics to a polymorphic higher-order language, where types are modelled by relators and polymorphic functions by transformations.

The significance of semantic polymorphic invariance is that if any analysis technique detects that an instance is strict then all instances must be strict. This holds even for instances whose strictness may not be detected by that analysis.

### 1.3 The Main Problem and a Solution

As illustrated by an example in the previous section, when different instances of a polymorphic function are used in a program, the abstract interpretation of each must be computed. The necessity of doing so and the fact that results from polymorphic invariance are not satisfactory was first pointed out by Burn [8]. On the other hand, it is obvious that the computation is very expensive; this is especially the case with recursive functions. This is the problem addressed in this thesis.

We have already seen how Hughes [21], in the first-order case, obtains an approximation to the abstract interpretation of any instance of a polymorphic function from that of the smallest. In this thesis, we develop a method similar to that of Hughes. Our method, however, is not restricted to first-order-functions. It applies to higher-order functions, and also to functions defined on lists. In most cases, the method gives good approximations and, moreover, these approximations are significantly cheaper to compute. We also show how similar techniques could be used in
abstract interpretations for binding-time analysis and termination analysis.

### 1.4 Other Approaches to Strictness Analysis

Before we move on to the next chapter, we give a summary of other methods used in strictness analysis.

### 1.4.1 Projections

Methods of doing strictness analysis for data types, lazy lists for example, over nonflat domains were developed by Hughes [20] (see also [22]). His approach is entirely different from the abstract interpretation described in the previous sections. The idea is to look at an expression to be evaluated and find out how much of its subexpressions are needed. For example if
$f \mathrm{x} y=\mathrm{x}+1$, looking at the body of f , i.e $\mathrm{x}+1$, it is easy to observe that it is strict in $x$ but not in $y$. In general, assuming that an expression is to be evaluated, the aim is to determine the sub-expressions that must necessarily be evaluated. In the example, if $\mathbf{x}+1$ is to be evaluated then $\mathbf{x}$, but not y , must be evaluated. Thus information propagates from expressions to their sub-expressions. We also note that the function never needs to evaluate its second argument; this kind of information may be useful. On the other hand, Mycroft's method would only detect that it is strict in $\mathbf{x}$, and gives no information about $y$.

To capture, in terms of semantics, the propagation of information from an expression to its sub-expressions Wadler and Hughes [51] introduced the idea of a projection. Let $D$ be a domain. A continuous function $\alpha: D \rightarrow D$ is called a projection on $D$, if

$$
\begin{aligned}
\alpha \circ \alpha & =\alpha \text { and } \\
\alpha & \sqsubseteq i d,
\end{aligned}
$$

where $i d$ is the identity function on $D$. For example, if $D$ is the domain of lists of
integers then the following two functions are projections on $D$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& H x s= \begin{cases}\perp & \text { if } x s=\perp: x s^{\prime} \\
x:\left(H x s^{\prime}\right) & \text { if } x s=x: x s^{\prime} \text { and } x \neq \perp \\
x s & \text { otherwise }\end{cases} \\
& T x s= \begin{cases}\perp & \text { if } x s \text { is (or an approximation to) an infinite list } \\
x s & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
\end{aligned}
$$

Projections are used in describing the extent to which expressions will be evaluated. As can be seen from the previous example, we normally start from an expression and a context in which it is going to be evaluated and then find out about the context in which the sub-expressions will be evaluated. Semantically, this may be expressed by an equation of the form $\beta \circ f=\beta \circ f \circ \alpha$, where $f: D \rightarrow E$ is a continuous function and $\alpha$ and $\beta$ are projections on $D$ and $E$ respectively. The equation is normally read as : $f$ is $\alpha$-strict in a $\beta$-strict context. Such an equation expresses the fact that whenever the body is to be evaluated in a $\beta$-strict context, then it is safe to evaluate the argument in an $\alpha$-strict context.

We consider an example that is given in [51]

```
before []\(=[]\)
before (cons x xs) \(=[]\), if \(x=0\)
    \(=\) cons x : (before xs )
```

Now, it is easy to see that

$$
i d \circ \text { before }=i d \circ \text { before } \circ H
$$

From this we say that before is head-strict. Kamin [31] has shown that such a property cannot be detected by abstract interpretation over finite domains representing Scott-closed sets. A comparison of the analyses, which use abstract interpretation and projections, is made by Burn [9]. He also introduces a notion of head-strictness which can be detected by abstract interpretation. Hunt [27] has developed an abstract interpretation where properties are partial equivalence relations, rather than Scott-closed sets; this is used to detect head-strictness.

The notion of polymorphic projections was introduced by Hughes and Launchbury [23]. Polymorphic projections are natural transformations in the category of domains
where the morphisms are strict and $\perp$-reflecting continuous functions. It is shown that polymorphic first-order functions are natural transformations in the category of domains and strict functions. They also prove a more general kind of an invariance theorem; that is, if $f_{\tau}$ is $\alpha_{\tau}$-strict in a $\beta_{\tau}$-strict context for some type $\tau$, then it is true for all types.

### 1.4.2 Strictness Analysis by Type Inference

Both abstract interpretation and projection analysis use denotational semantics in defining strictness. Kuo and Mishra introduced a type system for a language to express the strictness properties of programs [32]. Their approach is operational. First, they define an evaluation method for the language and then terms that do not have head normal forms are classified as divergent. Now, a term F is said to be strict if for every divergent term $\mathrm{E}, \mathrm{F} \mathrm{E}$ is divergent.

The type system used to express the strictness properties of programs has two constants (or basic types), $\phi$ and $\square$. In general (strictness) types are defined by the following syntax.

$$
\alpha::=\phi|\square| \alpha \rightarrow \alpha
$$

Semantically, $\phi$ stands for the set of all divergent terms, and $\square$ denotes the set of all terms, $\alpha \rightarrow \beta$ stands for all terms F such that F E is in $\beta$ whenever E is in $\alpha$. For example integer constants have the type $\square$, and $\phi \rightarrow \phi$ is a type of strict terms. Primitive operators, for example + , may have more than one strictness type. Both $\phi \rightarrow \square \rightarrow \phi$ and $\square \rightarrow \phi \rightarrow \phi$ are types of + . Moreover, there are terms which may have infinitely many types. For example $\lambda \mathrm{x} . \mathrm{x}$ has types of the form $\alpha \rightarrow \alpha$ for all types $\alpha$. To manage the situation of more than one type, type variables are introduced. Unfortunately functions need not have a principal type. For example + has several types and no sensible ordering can be defined on them. A single representation of the strictness type of such operators is only obtained by modifying the definition of types. The new types are the old types together with a set of constraints. The set of constraints is similar to the ones one finds in subtyping [16].

Jensen [28] has investigated the relationship between analyses by type-inference and by abstract interpretation. Whereas Kuo and Mishra concentrated on the algorithmic aspects of the type inference, Jensen's contribution was on the logical aspects via Stone duality. He enriched the type system by introducing operators, such as conjunction, and he proved that, as far as strictness is concerned, both methods are equally powerful. Furthermore, in [29] he considered a system of disjunctive types to develop a logic for strictness analysis. From this he obtained a disjunctive abstract interpretation. Both works are about the simply-typed $\lambda$-calculus. A more general and detailed account of the relationship between abstract interpretation and logic-based methods for program analysis is given in his thesis [30]. Benton [7] has also investigated strictness analysis by type-inference, and has proved that the analysis is polymorphically invariant. He also studied polymorphic invariance of higher-order properties. An example is the property of mapping strict functions to strict functions. It may not make sense to ask if every instance of a polymorphic function has this property. For instance, all instances of the identity function where it makes sense to ask such a question have the property. But, there are instances, and the simplest instance of the identity function is an example, where this doesn't apply.

In abstract interpretation, expensive computations have to be performed. To find fixed points of functions, iterations and tests for equality of functions at each iterative step have to be done. It is, therefore, claimed in [32] that the strictness analysis by type-inference is more efficient. This is partly because it is hoped that much that has been done in developing efficient type checkers will also apply to this analysis. However, carrying the sets of constraints around and checking if a type satisfies several constraints is likely to introduce inefficiency. We have not yet seen any reported results of experiments comparing the efficiency of abstract interpretation and type-inference.

## Chapter 2

## Some Mathematical Structures

In this chapter we introduce definitions and properties of some mathematical structures that are used in the thesis. All these structures are fairly standard and may be found, for example, in Plotkin [41].

### 2.1 Partial Orders

A binary relation $\sqsubseteq$ on a set $D$ is called a partial order, if the relation is :

- reflexive, i.e, $\forall x \in D: x \sqsubseteq x$
- transitive, i.e, $\forall x, y, z \in D:$ if $x \sqsubseteq y$ and $y \sqsubseteq z$ then $x \sqsubseteq z$
- antisymmetric, i.e, $\forall x, y \in D:$ if $x \sqsubseteq y$ and $y \sqsubseteq x$ then $x=y$

We call $(D, \sqsubseteq)$ (or just $D$ ) a partially ordered set.
Let $X$ be a subset of a partially ordered set $D$ and $a \in D, a$ is an upper bound of $X$ if $x \sqsubseteq a$ for all $x \in X$. If on the other hand, $a \sqsubseteq x$ for all $x \in X$ then $a$ is called a lower bound of $X$. An upper bound $a$ of X is called a least upper bound (or supremum or simply sup) of $X$ if $a \sqsubseteq b$ for all upper bounds $b$ of $X$. Similarly, a lower bound $a$ of $X$ is a greatest lower bound (or infimum or simply inf) of $X$ if
$b \sqsubseteq a$ for all lower bounds $b$ of $X$. Least upper bounds and greatest lower bounds are unique when they exist. This is a consequence of antisymmetry in the definition of partial order. The least upper bound and greatest lower bound of a set $X$ are denoted by $\bigsqcup X$ and $\Pi X$ respectively.

A non-empty subset $X$ of a partially ordered set $D$ is called a directed set if for every $a, b \in X$ there is a $c \in X$ such that $a \sqsubseteq c$ and $b \sqsubseteq c$. That is, every two-element subset of $X$ has an upper bound in $X$. Equivalently, a set $X$ is directed if every finite subset has an upper bound in $X$. A partially ordered set is said to be complete (or a cpo) if it has a least element (which is unique and usually denoted by $\perp$ ) and every directed set has a least upper bound. The least upper bound of a directed set is not necessarily an element of the set.

Let $D$ and $E$ be cpos and $f$ be a function from $D$ to $E . f$ is said to be continuous if for every sequence $\left\{x_{n}\right\}$ in $D$ with $x_{1} \sqsubseteq x_{2} \sqsubseteq x_{3} \sqsubseteq \ldots$ (such a sequence is called a chain) we have

$$
f\left(\bigsqcup x_{i}\right)=\bigsqcup f\left(x_{i}\right)
$$

It is simple to observe that continuity implies monotonicity. That is, whenever $x \sqsubseteq y$ we have $f(x) \sqsubseteq f(y)$.

Normally, continuity is defined in terms of directed sets rather than chains. However, in the structures which we use in this thesis, the two definitions are equivalent.

A complete partial order where all sets with upper bounds have least upper bounds is said to be consistently complete. An element $a$ of a cpo $D$ is called finite if for any directed set $X: a \sqsubseteq \bigsqcup X$ implies that there is an $x \in X$ such that $a \sqsubseteq x$. A cpo where for every $x,\{e \mid e \sqsubseteq x$ and $e$ is finite $\}$ is directed and $x=\bigsqcup\{e \mid e \sqsubseteq x$ and $e$ is finite $\}$ is called algebraic. Algebraic cpos where the set of finite elements is countable are called $\omega$-algebraic. A Scott domain (which we will simply call domain from now on) is a consistently complete $\omega$-algebraic cpo.

### 2.2 Constructions

There are many ways of building new cpos out of a given class of cpos. In this section two examples of constructions are given.
(i) If $\left\{D_{i} \mid i \in I\right\}$ is a family of cpos, then the product

$$
\prod_{i \in I} D_{i}
$$

is defined to be the set of all objects $\left\{a_{i}\right\}$ where for each $i, a_{i} \in D_{i}$. Thus, these objects may be viewed as function. That is the product may also be defined as

$$
\left\{f: I \rightarrow \bigcup_{i \in I} D_{i} \mid \forall i \in I: f(i) \in D_{i}\right\}
$$

An ordering can be defined on the product by letting $a \sqsubseteq b$ if and only if for every $i$ we have $a_{i} \sqsubseteq b_{i}$ in $D_{i}$. It can be shown that this ordering turns the product into a partially ordered set that is complete. If $I$ is a finite set, say $\{1,2, \ldots, n\}$, then the product is usually denoted by $D_{1} \times D_{2} \times \ldots \times D_{n}$.
(ii) If $D$ and $E$ are cpos then the set of all continuous functions from $D$ to $E$ is denoted by $D \rightarrow E$. The ordering, where $f \sqsubseteq g$ if and only if $f(a) \sqsubseteq g(a)$ for all $a \in D$, is a complete partial order. This set is called the function space.

### 2.3 Scott Topology and Powerdomains

Let $D$ be a non-empty set. A collection of subsets, $\Omega$, of $D$ that contains both $D$ and $\emptyset$, and that is closed under arbitrary unions and finite intersections is called a topology on $D$. We also say that $(D, \Omega)$ is a topological space. Elements of the topology are called open sets. Complements of open sets are called closed sets. A collection $\mathcal{B}$ of open subsets of $D$ is called a base for the topology $\Omega$ if every element of $\Omega$ is a union of some elements of $\mathcal{B}$. Clearly $\Omega$ itself is a base, but normally the bases of interest are the ones that are minimal in some sense.

Although continuity of functions between cpos was already defined, continuity is a topological concept. If $\left(D_{1}, \Omega_{1}\right)$ and $\left(D_{2}, \Omega_{2}\right)$ are two topological spaces and $f$ : $D_{1} \rightarrow D_{2}$ is a function, then $f$ is said to be continuous if for every open set $\mathcal{O}$ in $D_{2}, f^{-1}(\mathcal{O})$ is open in $D_{1}$. That is, the inverse image of an open set is open.

We will consider topologies that arise out of domains. Let $D$ be a domain and $\Omega$ be the collection of subsets $\mathcal{O}$ of $D$ that are upwards closed, i.e, for all $x \in \mathcal{O}$ and $y \in D$, if $x \sqsubseteq y$ then $y \in \mathcal{O}$, and moreover when $S$ is a directed subset of $D$ with $\sqcup S$ in $\mathcal{O}$ we have $S \cap \mathcal{O} \neq \emptyset$. It is not difficult to show that $\Omega$ is indeed a topology on $D$. It is called the Scott topology on $D$. Moreover, functions that are continuous between domains are also continuous in the topological sense and vice-versa.

Let $D$ be a domain. For every $a \in D$, define $a^{\dagger}$ and $a^{\downarrow}$ by :

$$
\begin{aligned}
a^{\uparrow} & =\{x \in D \mid a \sqsubseteq x\} \\
a^{\downarrow} & =\{x \in D \mid x \sqsubseteq a\}
\end{aligned}
$$

$a^{\dagger}$ and $a^{\downarrow}$ are respectively called the upward closure and downward closure of $\{a\}$ (sometimes the notation $\{a\}^{\dagger}$ and $\{a\}^{\downarrow}$ are respectively used instead of the above two). If $\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots\right\}$ is the set of finite elements of $D$ then each $a_{i}^{\uparrow}$ is open and moreover every open set $\mathcal{O}$ is a union of such open sets. Hence, these special open sets form a base for the Scott topology. They are referred to as basic open sets. An element $a$ of $D$ is finite if and only if $a^{\uparrow}$ is open; thus obtaining a characterisation of finiteness. However, there is no way of describing all closed sets in terms of the $a_{i}^{\not}$ 's, though $a^{\downarrow}$ is itself closed for any $a$.

Given some ordering, which is not necessarily complete, on a set $D$, there are several ways of defining orderings on the powerset (the set of all subsets) of $D$. Then by introducing some identifications, domains that are subsets of the powerset are obtained. Such domains are called powerdomains. For our purposes we simply start with a domain $D$ and consider some subsets of the powerset that form domains, without trying to define general constructions.

The Smyth powerdomain of a domain $D$, with $\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots\right\}$ as its set of finite elements, is the domain whose finite elements are finite unions of basic open sets of $D$. The ordering is the superset ordering. Thus a typical element of the powerdomain is
a (set-theoretic) intersection of a decreasing chain of such elements. On the other hand, the Hoare powerdomain is a domain whose finite elements are finite unions of downward closure of finite elements of $D$. The ordering is the subset ordering. Any element of this powerdomain is a (set-theoretic) union of an increasing chain of such sets.

### 2.4 Complete Lattices and Fixed Points

A lattice is a partially ordered set where every finite subset has both a least upper bound and a greatest lower bound. It is said to be complete if every subset has both a least upper bound and a greatest lower bound. Thus a complete lattice $A$ has both a least element $(\perp=\Pi A)$ and a largest element $(T=\bigsqcup A)$. Clearly a complete lattice is a cpo. An element $a$ of a lattice is said to be meet-irreducible, if $a=b \sqcap c$ implies that $a=b$ or $a=c$. It is called join-irreducible if $a=b \sqcup c$ implies that $a=b$ or $a=c$.

Tarski [49] proved that any monotonic function $f$ from a complete lattice $A$ into itself has a fixed point, i.e, there is an $a \in A$ such that $f(a)=a$. Moreover, the set of all fixed points is again a complete lattice.

The structures commonly used in the semantics of programming languages are not complete lattices but some kind of partial orders, and continuous functions on them. Continuous functions on cpos also have fixed points. Normally we are interested in least fixed points, and it is easy to show that for any continuous function $f$ from a cpo to itself

$$
\bigsqcup_{n \in \omega} f^{n}(\perp)
$$

is the least fixed point of $f$. Here $\omega$ is the set of natural numbers $\{0,1,2, \ldots\}, f^{0}$ is the identity function, and for each positive integer $n, f^{n}=f \circ f^{n-1}$.

### 2.5 Categories

Definition 2.5.1 $A$ category $\mathcal{K}$ is a structure defined by the following set of data and properties.
(i) We have a collection $\operatorname{Obj}(\mathcal{K})$ of objects.
(ii) For every pair of objects $A$ and $B$ in $\operatorname{Obj}(\mathcal{K})$, there is a set $H o m_{\mathcal{K}}(A, B)$, called the set of morphisms from $A$ to $B$.
(iii) Given $f \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{K}}(A, B)$ and $g \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{K}}(B, C)$, we may form the composite $g \circ f \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{K}}(A, C)$.
(iv) For every object $A$ there is a morphism $i d_{A} \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{K}}(A, A)$, called the identity morphism.
(v) The composition defined in (iii) is associative.
(vi) For every $f \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{K}}(A, B)$, we have $f \circ i d_{A}=f$ and $i d_{B} \circ f=f$

## Examples

(i) The collection of sets forms a category, where sets are objects, functions are morphisms, and ordinary function composition is the composition and the identity function is the identity morphism.
(ii) The collection of partially ordered sets forms a category, where the objects are partially ordered sets and the morphisms are continuous functions.
(iii) The collection of domains forms a category where domains are objects, continuous functions are morphisms, ordinary function composition becomes the composition of morphisms and the identity function becomes the identity morphism.

Given a category $\mathcal{K}$, its opposite category $\mathcal{K}^{o p}$ is defined to be the category with the same objects as $\mathcal{K}$, and for every pair of objects $A$ and $B, f \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{K}^{\circ p}}(A, B)$ if
and only if $f \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{K}}(B, A)$. Now it is easy to see how the composition should be defined, and then verifying that $\mathcal{K}^{o p}$ is indeed a category is also easy.

Let $\mathcal{C}$ and $\mathcal{D}$ be two categories. Then the product category, $\mathcal{C} \times \mathcal{D}$, is the category whose objects are pairs of the form $(A, B)$ where $A$ and $B$ are objects of $\mathcal{C}$ and $\mathcal{D}$ respectively. A morphism between $(A, B)$ and $(C, D)$ will be of the form $(f, g)$ where $f$ and $g$ are morphisms from $A$ to $C$ and from $B$ to $D$ respectively. Composition of morphisms is done component-wise. If for any positive integer $n$ we have categories $\mathcal{C}_{1}, \ldots, \mathcal{C}_{n}$, then we can define their product in a similar way.

Definition 2.5.2 A functor $F$ from a category $\mathcal{C}$ to a category $\mathcal{D}$ is a mapping that maps objects of $\mathcal{C}$ to objects of $\mathcal{D}$, and for every pair of objects $A$ and $B$ in the category $\mathcal{C}, F$ maps every morphism $f \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{C}}(A, B)$ to $F(f) \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{D}}(F(A), F(B))$ and satisfies the following conditions

$$
\begin{aligned}
F\left(i d_{A}\right) & =i d_{F(A)} \quad \text { for every object } A \in \operatorname{Obj}(\mathcal{C}), \text { and } \\
F(g \circ f) & =F(g) \circ F(f) \quad \text { whenever } g \circ f \text { is defined in } \mathcal{C}
\end{aligned}
$$

Such functors are called covariant functors. If instead of the second condition above, $F$ satisfies the condition : $F(g \circ f)=F(f) \circ F(g)$, then $F$ is called a contravariant functor.

Definition 2.5.3 Let $F$ and $G$ be two functors from the category $\mathcal{C}$ to the category $\mathcal{D}$. Let $\left\{f_{A}\right\}$ be a collection of morphisms indexed by the objects of the category $\mathcal{C}$, with each $f_{A} \in H_{\mathcal{D}}(F(A), G(A))$. Such a collection is called a natural transformation from $F$ to $G$ if for every pair of objects $A$ and $B$ in the category $\mathcal{C}$, and any morphism $h \in \operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{C}}(A, B)$ we have

$$
f_{B} \circ F(h)=G(h) \circ f_{A}
$$

## Chapter 3

## Lax Natural Transformations

In this chapter the main theoretical results which will be used in the remainder of the thesis are introduced. To do this, we define a category which we shall call the category of domains and embedding-closure pairs. We concentrate on a certain class of collections of functions satisfying a condition weaker than naturality. These will be used in the following chapters in investigating some semantic properties of polymorphic functions. Moreover, we study the category of finite lattices and embedding-closure pairs in detail. This category will be very useful in Chapters 6,7 , and 8 , where we establish a relationship between the abstract interpretation of different instances of any polymorphic function. The category of domains and embedding-projection pairs is also studied here; it is actually a category that has been used elsewhere, for example by Coquand et al [15].

From this point on, $\mathcal{C}$ will denote the category of domains and continuous functions.

### 3.1 Embedding-Closure Pairs

Consider the category $\mathcal{C}^{\text {ec }}$ whose objects are the same as that of $\mathcal{C}$, and with morphisms of the form $(e, c): A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$, where $e: A \rightarrow B$ and $c: B \rightarrow A$ are morphisms in $\mathcal{C}$ satisfying the conditions

$$
c \circ e=i d \text { and } e \circ c \sqsupseteq i d
$$

We shall call any such pair of continuous functions an embedding-closure pair. The set of embedding-closure pairs from $A$ to $B$, i.e, $\operatorname{Hom}_{\mathcal{C}^{e c}}(A, B)$, will be denoted by $A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$. If ( $e_{1}, c_{1}$ ) and ( $e_{2}, c_{2}$ ) are morphisms in $A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ and $B \rightarrow{ }^{e c} C$ respectively, then their composition $\left(e_{2}, c_{2}\right) \circ\left(e_{1}, c_{1}\right): A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} C$ is defined as $\left(e_{2} \circ e_{1}, c_{1} \circ c_{2}\right)$. It is trivial to check that this is indeed a morphism. $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$ is called the category of domains and embedding-closure pairs. If $(e, c)$ is a morphism, we shall call $e$ an embedding and $c$ a closure. For any morphism $f$ in $A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ we write $f=\left(f^{e}, f^{c}\right)$, where $f^{e}$ is the embedding and $f^{c}$ is the closure.

## Remarks

If $h$ and $k$ are morphisms in $A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ then

- $h^{e} \circ h^{c}$ is a closure on B, in the sense used by Scott in [45].

This is because

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(h^{e} \circ h^{c}\right) \circ\left(h^{e} \circ h^{c}\right) & =h^{e} \circ\left(h^{c} \circ h^{e}\right) \circ h^{c} \\
& =h^{e} \circ h^{c}
\end{aligned}
$$

and by definition $h^{e} \circ h^{c} \sqsupseteq i d$

- $h^{e}$ is one-to-one and $h^{c}$ is strict and onto.

To see this, suppose $h^{e}(x)=h^{e}(y)$. Then applying $h^{c}$ to both sides of the equation, we obtain $x=y$, which means that $h^{e}$ is one-to-one. Since $h^{c}\left(h^{e}(\perp)\right)=\perp$, we must have that $h^{c}(\perp)=\perp$, and hence $h^{c}$ is strict. To show that $h^{c}$ is onto, assume that $x \in A$. Let $y=h^{e}(x)$. Then $h^{c}(y)=h^{c}\left(h^{e}(x)\right)=x$. Thus, $h^{c}$ is onto.

- $h^{e}$ is $\perp$-reflecting, i.e, $h^{e}(a)=\perp \Rightarrow a=\perp$. This is because $h^{e}(\perp) \sqsubseteq h^{e}(a)$ and $h^{e}$ is one-to-one.
- $h^{e} \sqsubseteq k^{e}$ if and only if $h^{c} \sqsupseteq k^{c}$, and also $h^{e}$ is uniquely determined by $h^{c}$ and vice versa.


### 3.1.1 Functors on $\left(\mathcal{C}^{e c}\right)^{n}$

Since we want to model type constructions by functors, it is sufficient to consider a certain inductively defined class of functors. We call such functors type functors. These include the identity functor $I d$ and constant functors. Using a notation similar to Abramsky's [2], corresponding to product and function space constructors the mappings $\times$ and $\rightarrow$ are defined as follows.
(i) $\times: \mathcal{C}^{e c} \times \mathcal{C}^{e c} \rightarrow \mathcal{C}^{e c}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\times(A, B) & =A \times B \\
\times(f, g) & =\left(f^{e} \times g^{e}, f^{c} \times g^{c}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

(ii) $\rightarrow: \mathcal{C}^{e c} \times \mathcal{C}^{e c} \rightarrow \mathcal{C}^{e c}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\rightarrow(A, B) & =A \rightarrow B \\
\rightarrow(f, g) & =\left(\lambda h . g^{e} \circ h \circ f^{c}, \lambda h . g^{c} \circ h \circ f^{e}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Here, $A \times B$ denotes the product of $A$ and $B$ in $\mathcal{C}$, and $A \rightarrow B$ denotes the space of continuous functions from $A$ to $B$. We shall write $f \rightarrow g$ for $\rightarrow(f, g)$. In general, corresponding to type constructors that involve $n$ type variables a functor from $\left(\mathcal{C}^{\text {ec }}\right)^{n}$ to $\mathcal{C}^{\text {ec }}$ is defined.

For any type functor $F$ defined in this way there are two functors

$$
F^{e}:\left(\mathcal{C}^{e c}\right)^{n} \rightarrow \mathcal{C} \text { and } F^{c}:\left(\mathcal{C}^{e c}\right)^{n} \rightarrow \mathcal{C}^{o p}
$$

which act like $F$ on objects. On morphisms, $F^{e}$ selects the embedding component of $F(h)$, and $F^{c}$ selects the closure. That is, for any morphism $h F^{e}(h)=(F(h))^{e}$ and $F^{c}(h)=(F(h))^{c}$. In much of the discussion that follows we consider the case $n=1$. That is, we concentrate on functors defined on $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$.

It is possible to introduce an ordering on $A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ by letting $f \sqsubseteq g$ whenever $f^{e} \sqsubseteq g^{e}$. Thus, it makes sense to talk about monotonicity of functors. For example, we have the following proposition about the function type functor.

Proposition 3.1.1 Suppose $F$ is the functor $\rightarrow$. Then the functors $F^{e}$ and $F^{c}$ are monotonic in their second and first argument respectively. On the other hand, they are anti-monotonic with respect to their first and second argument respectively.

We omit the proof because it is very easy.
For any type functors $F$ and $G$, we define the type functors $F \times G$ and $F \rightarrow G$ by
(i) $\quad(F \times G)(A)=F(A) \times G(A)$

$$
(F \times G)(h)=\left(\left(F^{e} \times G^{e}\right)(h),\left(F^{c} \times G^{c}\right)(h)\right)
$$

(ii) $\quad(F \rightarrow G)(A)=F(A) \rightarrow G(A)$

$$
(F \rightarrow G)(h)=\left(\lambda k . G^{e}(h) \circ k \circ F^{c}(h), \lambda k . G^{c}(h) \circ k \circ F^{e}(h)\right)
$$

### 3.1.2 Lax Natural Transformations between Functors

Definition 3.1.1 Let $F$ and $G$ be functors on $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$ and $f$ be a family $\left\{f_{A}\right\}$ of continuous functions indexed by domains and $f_{A}: F(A) \rightarrow G(A)$. We say that $f$ is a lax natural transformation from $F$ to $G$, if for any morphism $h: A \rightarrow^{e c} B$ we have

$$
G^{c}(h) \circ f_{B} \sqsubseteq f_{A} \circ F^{c}(h)
$$

We call $f_{A}$ a component or an instance of the lax natural transformation.

## Remarks

- It is important to observe that each $f_{A}$ is a continuous function, not an embedding-closure pair.
- It is not difficult to see that the inequality in the definition above is equivalent to

$$
f_{B} \circ F^{e}(h) \sqsubseteq G^{e}(h) \circ f_{A}
$$



- The definition easily generalises to lax natural transformations between functors which have more than one argument.

Although the definition of lax natural transformations may be given by one of the two equivalent ways, when natural transformations are considered, it is important to note that the statements $f_{B} \circ F^{e}(h)=G^{e}(h) \circ f_{A}$ and $G^{c}(h) \circ f_{B}=f_{A} \circ F^{c}(h)$ are not equivalent. To see this, we consider the following example.

- Suppose $F(A)=A \rightarrow A$ and $G(A)=A$. If $Y_{A}$ denotes the fixed point operator, $\left\{Y_{A}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation from $F$ to $G$. For any $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$, it is not difficult to show that

$$
Y_{B} \circ F^{e}(h)=G^{e}(h) \circ Y_{A}
$$

On the other hand, consider the case where $A=2$ and $B=\{a, b, c\}$, with $a \sqsubset b \sqsubset c$. Define $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ and $f: B \rightarrow B$ such that $h^{e}(0)=b$ and $h^{e}(1)=c$ (it is not difficult to find $h^{c}$ from this), and $f(a)=a$ and $f(b)=f(c)=c$. Now, $G^{c}(h)\left(Y_{B}(f)\right)=0$ and $Y_{A}\left(F^{c}(h)(f)\right)=1$. Therefore, $G^{c}(h) \circ Y_{B} \neq Y_{A} \circ F^{c}(h)$

Before the end of this chapter, we will encounter an example of a lax natural transformation which is a natural transformation when the closures are used as morphisms, but not with embeddings.

Note also that using the embedding parts, we are describing naturality from $F^{e}$ to $G^{e}$, which are functors from $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$ to $\mathcal{C}$, whereas in the other case it describes naturality from $G^{c}$ to $F^{c}$ which are functors from $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$ to $\mathcal{C}^{o p}$.


This figure is about morphisms in $\mathcal{C}^{o p}$. If we reverse the four arrows in order to read it in $\mathcal{C}$, the resulting inequality is exactly the one given in the definition of a lax natural transformation above.

### 3.2 Finite Lattices and Embedding-Closure Pairs

When doing strictness analysis, calculation is performed on finite lattices. These are complete and moreover they are domains. Therefore, we study the category $\mathcal{A}^{\text {ec }}$ of finite lattices as a subcategory of $\mathcal{C}^{\text {ec }}$ more closely. Of special interest will be the morphisms from the two-element domain 2 to other finite lattices and their images under the various functors.

Definition 3.2.1 Let $A$ be a finite lattice and $a \in A$ be different from the top element $T_{A}$ of $A$. The functions $h_{a}^{e}: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow A$ and $h_{a}^{c}: A \rightarrow \mathbf{2}$ are defined by

$$
h_{a}^{e}(x)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
a & \text { if } x=0 \\
T_{A} & \text { if } x=1
\end{array} \quad \text { and } \quad h_{a}^{c}(x)= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } x \sqsubseteq a \\
1 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}\right.
$$

It is now simple to show that $h=\left(h_{a}^{e}, h_{a}^{c}\right)$ is a morphism in $2 \rightarrow^{e c} A$. Moreover, every morphism in $2 \rightarrow{ }^{e c} A$ has this form. This is because if $(f, g)$ is such a morphism, then letting $a=f(0)$ it is easy to show that $(f, g)=\left(h_{a}^{e}, h_{a}^{c}\right)$.

Our aim is to establish certain relationships between different components or instances of lax natural transformations. In particular, we would like to express the components corresponding to big lattices in terms of those of the smaller ones.

We now come to a very important theorem about lax natural transformations in the category of finite lattices and embedding-closure pairs. It provides an approximation to a component of a lax natural transformation corresponding to any finite lattice from the component corresponding to the lattice 2.

Theorem 3.2.1 If $f$ is a lax natural transformation from the functor $F$ to the functor $G$, and $A$ is any finite lattice then we have

$$
f_{A} \sqsubseteq \prod_{a} G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)
$$

where a ranges over the non-top elements of $A$.

## Proof

Let $h$ be any morphism in $2 \rightarrow^{e c} A$. Then,

$$
\begin{array}{cccc} 
& f_{A} \circ F^{e}(h) & \text { } & G^{e}(h) \circ f_{2} \\
\Rightarrow & f_{A} \circ F^{e}(h) \circ F^{c}(h) & \sqsubseteq & G^{e}(h) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}(h) \\
\Rightarrow & f_{A} & \sqsubseteq & G^{e}(h) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}(h)
\end{array}
$$

Since $h$ is arbitrary and is of the form $h_{a}$ for some $a$, we have

$$
f_{A} \sqsubseteq \Pi_{a} G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)
$$

Thus, from $f_{2}$ we obtain an approximate value to $f_{A}$. The greatest lower bound in the theorem is taken over $n-1$ values, where $n$ is the size of the lattice $A$, that is, the number of $a$ 's that are allowed in forming $h_{a}$. For a certain class of functors, some optimisations that cut down the number of functions involved exist. We will be more precise about these matters later.

If $F$ and $G$ are functors with $n$ parameters, the theorem above would be that for finite lattices $A_{1}, \ldots, A_{n}$

$$
f_{A_{1} \ldots A_{n}} \sqsubseteq \Pi G^{e}\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right) \circ f_{2 \ldots 2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right)
$$

where the greatest lower bound is taken over all possible $n$-tuples of morphisms $\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right)$ with $h_{i}: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow{ }^{e c} A_{i}$ for each $i$.

### 3.2.1 First-Order Type Functors

Type functors that do not involve the function space functor $\rightarrow$ will be referred to as first-order type functors. We now state and prove a number of properties of such functors and lax natural transformations between them.

Proposition 3.2.1 If $F$ is a first-order type functor then $F^{e}$ is monotonic and $F^{c}$ is anti-monotonic. That is, if $h$ and $k$ are embedding-closure pairs in $A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$, then whenever $h^{e} \sqsubseteq k^{e}$ we have $F^{e}(h) \sqsubseteq F^{e}(k)$ and $F^{c}(h) \sqsupseteq F^{c}(k)$.

The proof is straightforward.

Proposition 3.2.2 Let $F$ be a first-order type functor. Let $A$ be a finite lattice with $a, b \in A$. Suppose $k: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow{ }^{e c} A$ is a morphism. Then
(i) $F^{e}\left(h_{a \cap b}\right)=F^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \sqcap F^{e}\left(h_{b}\right)$ and $F^{c}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right)=F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right) \sqcup F^{c}\left(h_{b}\right)$
(ii) $F^{e}(k)$ is distributive over both $\sqcup$ and $\sqcap$, and $F^{c}(k)$ is distributive over $\sqcup$

## Proof

We will use induction on the structure of the functors.
(i) In the cases where $F=I d$ or $F$ is a constant functor it is trivial to show that the properties hold. Suppose $F=G \times H$ and assume that the properties hold for $G$ and $H$. Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
F^{e}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right) & =G^{e}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right) \times H^{e}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right) \\
& =\left(G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \sqcap G^{e}\left(h_{b}\right)\right) \times\left(H^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \sqcap H^{e}\left(h_{b}\right)\right) \\
& =\left(G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \times H^{e}\left(h_{a}\right)\right) \sqcap\left(G^{e}\left(h_{b}\right) \times H^{e}\left(h_{b}\right)\right) \\
& =F^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \sqcap F^{e}\left(h_{b}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Replacing, where appropriate, $e$ and $\Pi$ by $c$ and $\sqcup$ respectively in the above proof gives a proof of the second statement.
(ii) Again, the cases where $F=I d$ or $F$ is a constant functor are trivial. Suppose $F=G \times H$ and assume that the properties hold for $G$ and $H$. Let $x, y \in$ $F(\mathbf{2})$.Then,

$$
\begin{aligned}
F^{e}(k)(x \sqcup y) & =G^{e}(k)(x \sqcup y) \times H^{e}(k)(x \sqcup y) \\
& =\left(G^{e}(k)(x) \sqcup G^{e}(k)(y)\right) \times\left(H^{e}(k)(x) \sqcup H^{e}(k)(y)\right) \\
& =\left(G^{e}(k) \times H^{e}(k)\right)(x) \sqcup\left(G^{e}(k) \times H^{e}(k)\right)(y) \\
& =F^{e}(k)(x) \sqcup F^{e}(k)(y)
\end{aligned}
$$

The other statements can also be proved in a similar way.

To see why $F^{c}(k)$ does not in general distribute over $\Pi$, consider the case where $F=I d$ and $k \in \mathbf{2} \rightarrow^{e c}(\mathbf{2} \times \mathbf{2})$ is the embedding-closure pair $\left(k^{e}, k^{c}\right)$, where for each $x, k^{e}(x)=(x, x)$. Now, $k^{c}$ maps $(0,0)$ to 0 and the rest to 1 . Letting $a=(0,1)$ and $b=(1,0)$ we have $F^{c}(k)(a \sqcap b)=0$, but $F^{c}(k)(a) \sqcap F^{c}(k)(b)=1$.

We now prove a property of natural transformations between first-order type functors. Before stating the property we prove the following lemmas. The finite lattice $A$ used in the following lemmas and the proposition is assumed to have more than one elements.

Lemma 3.2.1 Let A be a finite lattice. Then,

$$
\prod_{a} h_{a}^{e} \circ h_{a}^{c}=i d_{A}
$$

## Proof

Let $a \neq \top_{A}$. Then $h_{a}^{e}(0)=a$ and $h_{a}^{c}(a)=0$, and hence $\left(h_{a}^{e} \circ h_{a}^{c}\right)(a)=a$. Moreover, $\left(h_{a}^{e} \circ h_{a}^{c}\right)\left(\top_{A}\right)=\top_{A}$. By definition $h_{a}^{e} \circ h_{a}^{c} \sqsupseteq i d_{A}$. From this it easy to observe that the statement holds. (NB. In oreder for the $h_{a}$ 's to be defined $A$ must have more than one element.)

Lemma 3.2.2 Let $F$ be a first-order functor and $A$ be a finite lattice. Then

$$
\prod_{a} F^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)=i d_{F(A)}
$$

## Proof

The proof is given by induction on the structure of $F$.
(i) If $F=I d$ then $F^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)=h_{a}^{e} \circ h_{a}^{c}$, and hence the statement follows from the previous lemma.
(ii) If $F$ is a constant functor then for every $h, F(h)=i d$ (the identity pair). Therefore, $F^{e}(h) \circ F^{c}(h)=i d_{F(A)}$ (the identity function on $F(A)$ ) and hence the statement holds.
(iii) Suppose $F=G \times H$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \prod_{a}(G \times H)^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ(G \times H)^{c}\left(h_{a}\right) \\
& \quad=\prod_{a}\left(\left(G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ G^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)\right) \times\left(H^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ H^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)\right)\right) \\
& \quad=\left(\prod_{a} G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ G^{c}\left(h_{a}\right), \prod_{a} H^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ H^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)\right) \\
&=\left(i d_{G(A)}, i d_{H(A)}\right) \\
&=i d_{(G \times H)(A)} \\
&=i d_{F(A)}
\end{aligned}
$$

We consider the case of natural transformations between first-order type functors Here, the naturality that is considered involves the closures.

Proposition 3.2.3 Let $F$ and $G$ be first-order type functors and $A$ be a finite lattice. If $f$ is a natural transformation from $F$ to $G$ then

$$
f_{A}=\prod_{a} G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)
$$

where a ranges over all non-top elements of $A$.

## Proof

Since $f$ is a natural transformation, for any $a$ in $A$ we have

$$
G^{c}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{A}=f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)
$$

This implies

$$
G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ G^{c}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{A}=G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)
$$

since $a$ is arbitrary

$$
\prod_{a} G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ G^{c}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{A}=\prod_{a} G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)
$$

But, from the preceding lemma we have

$$
\prod_{a} G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ G^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)=i d_{G(A)}
$$

and hence,

$$
f_{A}=\prod_{a} G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)
$$

The following proposition is used to reduce the number of functions involved in the computation of the greatest lower bound.

Proposition 3.2.4 Let $F$ and $G$ be first-order type functors and $f$ be a lax natural transformation from $F$ to $G$. If $a$ and $b$ are elements of $a$ finite lattice $A$ then

$$
G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right) \sqcap G^{e}\left(h_{b}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{b}\right) \sqsubseteq G^{e}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right)
$$

## Proof

Since the functors are first-order, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
G^{e}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right) & =\left(G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \sqcap G^{e}\left(h_{b}\right)\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right) \\
& =G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right) \sqcap G^{e}\left(h_{b}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a \sqcap b}\right) \\
& \sqsupseteq G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right) \sqcap G^{e}\left(h_{b}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{b}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

We now have the following corollary.

Corollary 3.2.1 If $F, G, f$ and $A$ are as in preceding proposition then

$$
\prod_{a} G^{e}\left(h_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)=\prod_{t} G^{e}\left(h_{t}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{t}\right)
$$

where a ranges over elements of $A-\left\{\top_{A}\right\}$, and $t$ is restricted to the meet-irreducible ones.

The consequence of this corollary is that the computation of the greatest lower bound of the functions can be made efficient by using only those which correspond to the meet-irreducible elements. In the case where $A$ is a chain, there is no improvement because all elements are meet-irreducible.

### 3.2.2 Some Special Transformations

Later, we will use the collections $\left\{\sqcup_{A}\right\}$ and $\left\{\triangleright_{A}\right\}$ of functions indexed by finite lattices $A$. The function $\sqcup_{A}$ is the usual least upper bound operation on the lattice $A$. The function $\triangleright_{A}: 2 \times A \rightarrow A$ is defined by

$$
\triangleright_{A}(x, y)= \begin{cases}\perp & x=0 \\ y & x=1\end{cases}
$$

Clearly both $\sqcup_{A}$ and $\triangleright_{A}$ are continuous functions. Moreover, both the collections $\left\{\sqcup_{A}\right\}$ and $\left\{\triangleright_{A}\right\}$ form lax natural transformations. To see this consider a morphism $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ between the finite lattices $A$ and $B$. For all $x, y \in A$, using infix notation, it is easy to show that

$$
h^{e}(x) \sqcup_{B} h^{e}(y) \sqsubseteq h^{e}\left(x \sqcup_{A} y\right)
$$

Hence, $\left\{\sqcup_{A}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation from the functor $I d \times I d$ to the identity functor Id. The above inequality cannot, in general, be replaced by equality; there are examples for which equality does not hold. On the other hand, the condition is equivalent to

$$
h^{c} \circ \sqcup_{B} \sqsubseteq \sqcup_{A} \circ\left(h^{c} \times h^{c}\right)
$$

However, we also know that

$$
h^{c} \circ \sqcup_{B} \sqsupseteq \sqcup_{A} \circ\left(h^{c} \times h^{c}\right)
$$

Therefore,

$$
h^{c} \circ \sqcup_{B}=\sqcup_{A} \circ\left(h^{c} \times h^{c}\right)
$$

Hence $\left\{\sqcup_{A}\right\}$ is a natural transformation when one uses the closure components as morphisms.

Also, again using infix notation, for any $x, y \in A$, we have

$$
i d(x) \triangleright_{B} h^{e}(y) \sqsubseteq h^{e}\left(x \triangleright_{A} y\right)
$$

Hence $\left\{\triangleright_{A}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation from $F \times I d$ to $I d$, where $F$ is the constant functor returning 2. If $x=\perp$ then we have $\perp$ on the left hand side, and $h^{e}(\perp)$ on the right. Thus, equality does not hold in general; in particular, if we choose $h$ such that $h^{e}$ is not strict. On the other hand, it can also be shown that

$$
h^{c} \circ \triangleright_{B}=\triangleright_{A} \circ\left(i d \times h^{c}\right)
$$

Therefore, $\left\{\triangleright_{A}\right\}$ is also a natural transformation when we use the closure components as morphisms.

### 3.3 Embedding-Projection Pairs

The category of domains and embedding-projection pairs, $\mathcal{C}^{e p}$, is defined to be the category whose objects are domains and the morphisms are of the form (e,p) : $A \rightarrow{ }^{e p} B$ where both $e: A \rightarrow B$ and $p: B \rightarrow A$ are continuous functions satisfying

$$
p \circ e=i d \text { and } e \circ p \sqsubseteq i d
$$

We call $e$ an embedding and $p$ a projection. We denote the set of all embeddingprojection pairs from $A$ to $B$ by $A \rightarrow{ }^{e p} B$. If ( $e_{1}, p_{1}$ ) and ( $e_{2}, p_{2}$ ) are morphisms in $A \rightarrow^{e p} B$ and $B \rightarrow{ }^{e p} C$ respectively, then their composition $\left(e_{2}, p_{2}\right) \circ\left(e_{1}, p_{1}\right): A \rightarrow^{e p}$
$C$ is defined to be the pair $\left(e_{2} \circ e_{1}, p_{1} \circ p_{2}\right)$. For any morphism $f$ in $A \rightarrow^{e p} B$ we will write $f=\left(f^{e}, f^{p}\right)$, where $f^{e}$ is the embedding and $f^{p}$ is the projection. This category has been studied and used extensively in foundational issues in domain theory, and in particular for describing a semantics of the polymorphic $\lambda$-calculus by Coquand et al [15].

## Remarks

If $k$ and $l$ are morphisms in $A \rightarrow^{e p} B$ then

- $k^{e} \circ k^{p}$ is a projection on B, in the sense used by Scott in [45].
- $k^{e}$ is one-to-one and $k^{p}$ is onto.
- both $k^{e}$ and $k^{p}$ are strict.
- since $k^{e}$ is one-to-one and strict, $k^{e}$ is $\perp$-reflecting.
- $k^{e} \sqsupseteq l^{e}$ if and only if $k^{p} \sqsubseteq l^{p}$, and hence $k^{e}$ is uniquely determined by $k^{p}$ and vice-versa.


### 3.3.1 Functors on $\left(\mathcal{C}^{e p}\right)^{n}$

Here, as for $\left(\mathcal{C}^{e c}\right)^{n}$, type constructions involving $n$ type variables may be modelled by functors from $\left(\mathcal{C}^{e p}\right)^{n}$ to $\mathcal{C}^{e p}$. The definitions of the functors $\times$ and $\rightarrow$, for example, can be given in a similar way; all we have to do is replace the $c$, wherever it occurs as a superscript in the earlier section, by $p$. The definition of the other functors are also given in a similar way.

### 3.3.2 Lax Natural Transformations between Functors on $\left(\mathcal{C}^{e p}\right)^{n}$

Definition 3.3.1 Let $F$ and $G$ be functors and $f$ be a family $\left\{f_{A}\right\}$ of continuous functions indexed by domains and $f_{A}: F(A) \rightarrow G(A)$. We say that $f$ is a lax natural
transformation from $F$ to $G$ if for every morphism $k: A \rightarrow^{e p} B$ we have

$$
G^{p}(k) \circ f_{B} \sqsupseteq f_{A} \circ F^{p}(k)
$$

It is easy to show that the inequality above is equivalent to

$$
f_{B} \circ F^{e}(k) \sqsupseteq G^{e}(k) \circ f_{A}
$$

However, as before naturality in terms of the embeddings is not equivalent to naturality in terms of the projections.

### 3.4 Finite Lattices and Embedding-Projection Pairs

The category of finite lattices and embedding-projection pairs $\mathcal{A}^{e p}$ is a subcategory of $\mathcal{C}^{e p}$. The morphisms from 2 to any finite lattice my be given by the following definition.

Definition 3.4.1 Let $A$ be a finite lattice, and let $a \in A$ be different from $\perp_{A}$. The continuous functions $k_{a}^{e}: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow A$ and $k_{a}^{p}: A \rightarrow \mathbf{2}$ are defined by

$$
k_{a}^{e}(x)=\left\{\begin{array}{ll}
a & \text { if } x=1 \\
\perp_{A} & \text { if } x=0
\end{array} \quad \text { and } \quad k_{a}^{p}(x)= \begin{cases}1 & \text { if } x \sqsupseteq a \\
0 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}\right.
$$

Clearly $\left(k_{a}^{e}, k_{a}^{p}\right)$ is an embedding-projection pair, and moreover every embeddingprojection pair from 2 to $A$ is of this form. Furthermore, we state the following proposition which is not difficult to prove.

Proposition 3.4.1 For any finite lattice $A$, we have

$$
\bigsqcup_{a} k_{a}^{e} \circ k_{a}^{p}=i d_{A}
$$

We now come to a theorem which relates any component, of a lax natural transformation, corresponding to a finite lattice with the component which corresponds to 2.

Theorem 3.4.1 If $f$ is a lax natural transformation between the functors $F$ and $G$, and $A$ is any finite lattice then we have :

$$
f_{A} \sqsupseteq \bigsqcup_{a} G^{e}\left(k_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{p}\left(k_{a}\right)
$$

where a ranges over the non-bottom elements of $A$.

The proof is straightforward.
Again from $f_{2}$ we get an approximate value to $f_{A}$ from below. The least upper bound is taken over $n-1$ functions, where $n$ is the size of $A$.

### 3.4.1 First-Order Type Functors

For natural transformations between first-order type functors, the theorem above could be strengthened; in fact we have an equality. We first give a lemma that may be used in its proof.

Lemma 3.4.1 Let $F$ be a first-order type functor and $A$ be a finite lattice. Then

$$
\bigsqcup_{a} F^{e}\left(k_{a}\right) \circ F^{p}\left(k_{a}\right)=i d_{F(A)}
$$

Here again, a ranges over non-bottom elements of $A$.

Next, the case of natural transformations between first-order type functors are considered. The naturality used here is the one that involves the projections.

Proposition 3.4.2 Let $F$ and $G$ be first-order type functors and $A$ be a finite lattice. If $f$ is a natural transformation from $F$ to $G$ then

$$
f_{A}=\bigsqcup_{a} G^{e}\left(k_{a}\right) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{p}\left(k_{a}\right)
$$

where a ranges over all non-bottom elements of $A$.

It can be shown that in this proposition, the least upper bound may be taken over $a$ 's that are join-irreducible. Thus, in the case where $A$ is not a chain, we have a cheaper way of computing it.

### 3.4.2 A Special Transformation

We will need the collection $\left\{\Pi_{A}\right\}$ of continuous functions indexed by finite lattices later, where $\Pi_{A}$ is the usual meet operation on the finite lattice $A$. It is a lax natural transformation from the functor $I d \times I d$ to $I d$. To show this consider any morphism $k: A \rightarrow{ }^{e p} B$ between finite lattices $A$ and $B$. Let $x, y \in B$. Using the infix notation,

$$
\begin{aligned}
k^{p}\left(x \sqcap_{B} y\right) & \sqsupseteq k^{p}\left(k^{e}\left(k^{p}(x)\right) \sqcap_{B} k^{e}\left(k^{p}(y)\right)\right) \\
& \sqsupseteq k^{p}\left(k^{e}\left(k^{p}(x) \sqcap_{A} k^{p}(y)\right)\right) \\
& =k^{p}(x) \sqcap_{A} k^{p}(y)
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence, it is a lax natural transformation. On the other hand,

$$
k^{p}\left(x \sqcap_{B} y\right) \sqsubseteq k^{p}(x) \sqcap_{A} k^{p}(y)
$$

Therefore, $k^{p}$ distributes over $\Pi_{B}$ and hence the collection is a natural transformation when projections are used as morphisms. It can be shown that $k^{e}$ also distributes over $\Pi_{A}$. Therefore, the collection is also a natural transformation if we use the embeddings as morphisms.

We will see how to apply these results in the course of the next few chapters.

## Chapter 4

## Semantics of a Polymorphic Language

In this chapter we introduce a polymorphic language that will be used in later chapters to illustrate our work on abstract interpretation of polymorphic functions. A semantics for this language is also presented. In this semantics any polymorphic function is viewed as a collection of functions where each function in the collection is the semantics of some instance of the polymorphic function. In Chapter 5, a relationship between the semantics of different instances of any polymorphic function is established.

### 4.1 Introduction

There are two commonly used forms of polymorphism in programming languages. One arises from the Hindley-Milner type system [35] found in languages such as ML and Miranda ${ }^{\dagger}$ [50]. Normally, expressions in programs are untyped and their types are inferred at compile-time. Girard [17] and Reynolds [42] independently developed a calculus of the second form of polymorphism where types appear explicitly in expressions. In this explicitly typed system type-checking is done at compiletime to ensure that the type of every expression conforms with the typing rules.

[^0]The important difference between the two forms of polymorphism comes from the definition of types used in both systems and from the rules used in assigning types to expressions. We will see this more clearly in the next section.

Extensive work has been done, and still continues to be done, on compilers for languages with the Hindley-Milner type system. Moreover such compilers are widely available. We will therefore concentrate on languages with the Hindley-Milner type system. It is also the case that the semantics of such languages is easier to describe. However, in order to use type information for various program analyses, it is preferable to work with explicitly typed languages. This should not be regarded as a restriction because types of expressions can be obtained by inference at compiletime. A good example of such a language is Core- $X M L$, a language introduced by Mitchell and Harper in [36]. Core-XML is an explicitly typed fragment of Standard ML.

First we define an explicitly typed language similar to Core-XML. The difference is that it has the fixed-point operator fix, a pairing operation < , >, and some more operations. Mitchell and Harper point out that Core-XML has classical settheoretic models, and Ohori [39] actually describes such a model. The semantics provided here uses domains instead of sets so that fix can be assigned a meaning.

### 4.2 Syntax

### 4.2.1 Type Expressions

We assume that there are some base types, the type of integers int and the type of booleans bool are among them. We use $b$ to denote any base type. There are two classes of types, and the first is that of types defined by the grammar

$$
\tau::=t|b| \tau \times \tau \mid \tau \rightarrow \tau
$$

where $t$ stands for type variables. Types ranged over by $\tau$ and not containing type variables are called monotypes.

The second class is given by

$$
\sigma::=\tau \mid \forall t . \sigma
$$

Types ranged over by $\sigma$ are called type-schemes and types of the form $\forall t . \sigma$ are called polytypes. We shall write $\forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} . \sigma$ for $\forall t_{1} \ldots \forall t_{n} . \sigma$. Free and bound type variables, and the substitution $\sigma_{2}\left[\sigma_{1} / t\right]$ of a type $\sigma_{1}$ for a free type variable $t$ in the type $\sigma_{2}$ are defined in the usual way.

It is important to observe that here every polytype $\sigma$ is of the form $\forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} . \tau$ and hence type-schemes are not closed under $\times$ or $\rightarrow$. For example, $(\forall t . t \rightarrow t) \rightarrow(\forall t . t \rightarrow t)$ is not a type in this system. On the other hand, the types used by Girard and Reynolds may be given by the single definition

$$
\xi::=t|b| \xi \times \xi|\xi \rightarrow \xi| \forall t . \xi
$$

Therefore, they are closed under both $\times$ and $\rightarrow$.

### 4.2.2 Terms

The language we are interested in is an extension of Core-XML. The pre-terms of the language are given by the following grammar.

$$
\begin{aligned}
E:= & x|c| \lambda x: \tau . E|(E E)| \text { if } \tau E E E \mid \text { fix } \tau E \\
& |<E, E>| \text { fst } \tau \times \tau E \mid \text { snd } \tau \times \tau E \\
& \mid \text { let } x: \sigma=E \text { in } E|\Lambda t . E| E[\tau]
\end{aligned}
$$

Not all expressions defined in this way are terms of the language. Only well-typed terms are permitted. It is therefore necessary to provide typing rules to decide if a term is well-typed and hence legal. Free and bound (term) variables are defined in the usual way. The expression $E_{2}\left[E_{1} / x\right]$ is used to denote the term that is obtained by substituting $E_{1}$ for the free occurrences of $x$ in $E_{2}$.

A type variable $t$ is said to be free in an expression $E$, if it is free in any of the types occurring in $E$. The substitution $E_{2}[\tau / t]$ is defined as the expression that is obtained by substituting $\tau$ for the free occurrences of $t$. It is not necessary to define $E_{2}[\sigma / t]$ for arbitrary $\sigma$ (and hence possibly belonging to the second class of types) because such expressions never arise in the process of evaluation of terms.

The most significant difference of this language from the simply-typed $\lambda$-calculus is that here there are type abstraction and type application. Moreover, let provides a restricted version of binding a variable with a polytype. On the other hand, it is very important to note that the type $\tau$ in the abstraction $\lambda x: \tau . E$ and the application $E[\tau]$ is not a polytype. In the second-order $\lambda$-calculus, the calculus developed by Girard and by Reynolds, there is no such restriction. It is this generality which makes the description of the semantics of this calculus very complicated.

### 4.2.3 Type Checking Rules

We introduce some notation for typing rules. A statement which expresses that a term $E$ has a type $\sigma$ is written as $E: \sigma$. The type of a term depends on the types of the free term variables occurring in it. Thus, a statement of the form $E: \sigma$ is made under a type assumption (or type assignment), which is an association of term variables with types. More precisely, a type assumption $\Gamma$ is a partial function from the set of term variables to types. It may also be expressed as a set $\left\{x_{1}: \sigma_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}: \sigma_{n}\right\}$. If $x$ is not in the domain of $\Gamma$ (written $\operatorname{dom}(\Gamma)$ ), we shall write $\Gamma, x: \sigma$ for $\Gamma \cup\{x: \sigma\}$.

We write the formula $\Gamma \vdash E: \sigma$ to say that $E$ has the type $\sigma$ under the type assumption $\Gamma$. We assume that for each constant $c$ we have a rule $\} \vdash c: \sigma$ for some type $\sigma$. The type rules are given in Figure 4.1.
(VAR)

$$
\Gamma, x: \sigma \vdash x: \sigma
$$

(ABS)

$$
\frac{\Gamma, x: \tau \vdash E: \tau^{\prime}}{\Gamma \vdash \lambda x: \tau . E: \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}
$$

(APP)

$$
\frac{\Gamma \vdash E_{1}: \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime} \Gamma \vdash E_{2}: \tau}{\Gamma \vdash\left(E_{1} E_{2}\right): \tau^{\prime}}
$$

(PROD)

$$
\frac{\Gamma \vdash E_{1}: \tau \quad \Gamma \vdash E_{2}: \tau^{\prime}}{\Gamma \vdash<E_{1}, E_{2}>: \tau \times \tau^{\prime}}
$$

(PROJ)

$$
\frac{\Gamma \vdash E: \tau \times \tau^{\prime}}{\Gamma \vdash \mathrm{fst} \tau \times \tau^{\prime} E: \tau} \frac{\Gamma \vdash E: \tau \times \tau^{\prime}}{\Gamma \vdash \operatorname{snd} \tau \times \tau^{\prime} E: \tau^{\prime}}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\Gamma \vdash E: \sigma}{\Gamma \vdash \Lambda t \cdot E: \forall t . \sigma} \tag{TABS}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
(t \text { not free in } \Gamma)
$$

(TAPP)

$$
\frac{\Gamma \vdash E: \forall t . \sigma}{\Gamma \vdash E[\tau]: \sigma[\tau / t]}
$$

$\frac{\Gamma \vdash E_{1}: \sigma \quad \Gamma, x: \sigma \vdash E_{2}: \tau}{\Gamma \vdash \operatorname{let} x: \sigma=E_{1} \text { in } E_{2}: \tau}$
(COND)
$\frac{\Gamma \vdash E_{0}: \text { bool } \Gamma \vdash E_{1}: \tau \Gamma \vdash E_{2}: \tau}{\Gamma \vdash \text { if } \tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2}: \tau}$
(FIX)

$$
\frac{\Gamma \vdash E: \tau \rightarrow \tau}{\Gamma \vdash \operatorname{fix} \tau E: \tau}
$$

Figure 4.1: Type Rules

Notice that the rule (TABS) has the restriction that $t$ is not free in $\Gamma$. This means that $t$ is not free in any of the types that are associated with the variables by $\Gamma$. That is, $t$ is not free in $\Gamma(x)$ for every $x \in \operatorname{dom}(\Gamma)$.

### 4.3 Semantics

The semantics of the simply typed $\lambda$-calculus is normally given by assigning a set to each base type, and then sets appropriate to higher-order types are constructed by induction on the structure of the types. The meaning of each term is then defined to be some value in the set corresponding to the type of the term. For languages that allow recursion, sets with some order structure on them are used.

In this section, we use domains to interpret types from the first class (which are either monotypes or type variables). Then, the semantic functions which assign values to terms are defined. We will not need to be more explicit about the semantics of polymorphic terms except to define the semantics of any such term to be a collection of values, where each value is the semantics of some instance of the polymorphic term.

### 4.3.1 Semantics of Types

The semantics of a monotype $\tau$ is normally specified by associating it with a domain $D_{\tau}$. Each base type $b$ is associated with a domain $D_{b}$. We shall normally write Int and Bool for the domains of integers and booleans respectively. That is,

$$
\text { Int }=\{\perp\} \cup \mathcal{Z} \text { and Bool }=\{\perp, \text { True }, \text { False }\}
$$

where $\mathcal{Z}$ is the set of all integers. The domain, $D_{\tau_{1} \times \tau_{2}}$, associated with the type $\tau_{1} \times \tau_{2}$ is defined to be the product $D_{\tau_{1}} \times D_{\tau_{2}} . D_{\tau_{1} \rightarrow \tau_{2}}$ is defined to be the set, $D_{\tau_{1}} \rightarrow D_{\tau_{2}}$, of continuous functions from $D_{\tau_{1}}$ to $D_{\tau_{2}}$.

The semantics of a type $\tau$ which contains type variables depends on the domains associated with the variables. Therefore, we start with an assignment $S$ of domains to type variables. We shall call such an assignment domain assignment. Any domain
assignment can be extended to a function $\Im$ which provides a semantics to all type expressions in the first class. The semantics of $\tau$ is given as $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S$, where it is defined by induction on the structure of $\tau$ as follows

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Im \llbracket b \rrbracket S & =D_{b}, \quad \text { for any base type } b \\
\Im \llbracket t \rrbracket S & =S(t) \\
\Im \llbracket \tau_{1} \times \tau_{2} \rrbracket S & =\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{1} \rrbracket S\right) \times\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{2} \rrbracket S\right) \\
\Im \llbracket \tau_{1} \rightarrow \tau_{2} \rrbracket S & =\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{1} \rrbracket S\right) \rightarrow\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{2} \rrbracket S\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

### 4.3.2 Semantics of Terms

The meaning of a term will be defined to be a value in the domain that corresponds to its type. The domain depends on the domain assignment the type is evaluated under. Since the term may have ordinary variables occurring freely in it, obviously its value will depend on the values bound to these variables. Such an association of values with variables is given by an environment, which is a partial function from the set of ordinary variables to a set of values.

In the following definition, we follow Reynolds's approach [43]. For any type assignment $\Gamma$ and type $\tau$, we let $A_{\Gamma, \tau}$ to be the set of all terms $E$ such that $\Gamma \vdash E: \tau$. Now a semantic function $\mu_{\Gamma, \tau}$ will be defined on this set; it will also have domain assignments and environments as parameters.

Let $S$ be a domain assignment and $\eta$ be an environment. We define $\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta$ to be some value in $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S$. From now on, when we deal with this kind of expression we will assume that the variables in the environment are bound to values of the correct type, i.e, $\eta(x) \in \Im \llbracket \Gamma(x) \rrbracket S$. Moreover, we will assume that $\eta(x)$ is defined only when $\Gamma(x)$ is either a type variable or a monotype.

As in Reynolds [43], we assume that for each base type $b$ and the set $K_{b}$ of constants of type $b$, there is a function $\alpha_{b}: K_{b} \rightarrow D_{b}$ that provides an interpretation to the constants.

Now, the semantic functions are defined by structural induction on terms.
(1) If $k \in K_{b}$ then $\mu_{\Gamma, b} \llbracket k \rrbracket S \eta=\alpha_{b}(k)$
(2) If $x \in \operatorname{dom}(\Gamma)$ then $\mu_{\Gamma, \Gamma(x)} \llbracket x \rrbracket S \eta=\eta(x)$
(3) If $E_{1} \in A_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}$ and $E_{2} \in A_{\Gamma, \tau}$ then

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket\left(E_{1} E_{2}\right) \rrbracket S \eta=\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta\right)\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta\right)
$$

(4) If $E \in A_{(\Gamma, x: \tau), r^{\prime}}$ then

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket \lambda x: \tau . E \rrbracket S \eta=\lambda d \in(\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S) . \mu_{(\Gamma, x: \tau), \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S(\eta[d / x])
$$

(5) If $E_{1} \in A_{\Gamma, \tau}$ and $E_{2} \in A_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}}$ then $\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket<E_{1}, E_{2}>\rrbracket S \eta=\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta, \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta\right)$
(6) If $E \in A_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}}$ then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \mathrm{f} \mathrm{st} \tau \times \tau^{\prime} E \rrbracket S \eta=f s t\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right), \quad \text { and } \\
& \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \tau \llbracket \mathrm{snd} \tau \times \tau^{\prime} E \rrbracket S \eta=\operatorname{snd}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

(7) Let $c=\mu_{\Gamma, \text { bool }} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S \eta$. Then

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \text { if } \tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta= \begin{cases}\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta & \text { if } c=\text { True } \\ \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta & \text { if } c=\text { False } \\ \perp & \text { if } c=\perp\end{cases}
$$

(8) $\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \mathrm{fix} \tau E \rrbracket S \eta=\bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right)^{n}(\perp)$
(9) $\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket$ let $x: \sigma=E_{1}$ in $E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta=\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2}\left[E_{1} / x\right] \rrbracket S \eta$
(10) If $\Gamma \vdash \Lambda t_{1} \ldots \Lambda t_{n} \cdot E: \forall t_{1} . . t_{n} . \tau$ then for types $\tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{n}$

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket\left(\Lambda t_{1} \ldots \Lambda t_{n} . E\right)\left[\tau_{1}\right] \ldots\left[\tau_{n}\right] \rrbracket S \eta=\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S\left[D_{1} / t_{1}\right] \ldots\left[D_{n} / t_{n}\right] \eta
$$

where for each $i$

$$
D_{i}=\Im \llbracket \tau_{i} \rrbracket S
$$

## Remarks

(i) The functions $f s t$ and $s n d$, used in (6) above, are the usual projection functions on products of two domains.
(ii) If a term has no type variables occurring freely in it then the definition above is independent of $S$. It is also independent of $\eta$ if it is closed, i.e, if there are no term variables occurring freely in it.
(iii) Consider any closed polymorphic term $\Lambda t_{1} \ldots \Lambda t_{n} . E$ of type $\forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} . \tau$. The semantics of this term, because of (10) above, can be given as the collection $\left\{f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}}\right\}$, where for any $\Gamma, \eta$, and $S$ mapping each $t_{i}$ to $D_{i}$

$$
f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}}=\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta
$$

### 4.4 Summary

The semantics provided above is similar to the one given by Ohori [39]. Essentially, we start with a model for the simply typed $\lambda$-calculus and use the usual set-theoretic constructions to obtain a model for the polymorphic language. Now, the semantics of a polymorphic function is regarded as a collection of continuous functions. The semantics of each monomorphic instance is a member of this collection. Recall that our interest is in establishing a relationship between any pair of such continuous functions. This is done in the next chapter.

## Chapter 5

## Relational Semantics

Different abstract interpretations are presented in Chapters 6, 7 and 8. The properties studied are to do with strictness, binding-time and termination. The abstract interpretation used in each analysis may be viewed as a (non-standard) semantics of the language. In all three cases any polymorphic function is interpreted as a collection of continuous functions. In each analysis, different instances of the same polymorphic function are somehow to be related.

In order not to be repetitive, we first consider the standard semantics defined in the previous chapter. In this chapter, we establish a relationship between the semantics of different instances of any polymorphic function. Once this is done, the case of all the non-standard semantics that we study in later chapters becomes significantly easier. Also, as a result of the relationship we establish in this chapter, it is possible to show the semantic polymorphic invariance of strictness.

### 5.1 Introduction

For a polymorphic language, we showed that type constructors may be interpreted as functors and polymorphic functions as lax natural transformations (Baraki [6]). The category used there has domains as objects and embedding-closure pairs as morphisms. The lax natural transformation condition relates the values of any two
instances of a polymorphic function. From such a relationship we obtain an approximate value to an instance of a polymorphic function from the value of the smallest instance. Any property, relating to strictness, that holds for the approximate value also holds for the actual value. Thus the procedure gives correct results. It was for this reason that we chose to work with the category of domains and embeddingclosure pairs. As one might expect from any approximation, the information may not always be as precise as the one one would obtain from the actual value.

In this chapter we prove similar results for the language defined earlier. This language may be seen as an extension of the one used in [6] because, among other things, it allows let-declarations. It will be shown that the results follow from what we shall call, following Reynolds [42], the representation theorem. The representation theorem is a statement about the relationship between meanings of an expression obtained by evaluating in different environments. It is very similar to Reynolds's theorem about an extended typed $\lambda$-calculus in [43], where he proves an abstraction theorem which generalises his representation theorem of [42].

The statement and proof of the representation theorem will not involve any terminology from category theory. However, we show later that one of its consequences is that polymorphic functions are lax natural transformations. From this we obtain a proof of a partial result about the semantic polymorphic invariance of strictness. That is, if the smallest instance of a polymorphic function is strict then so is any other instance. In order to prove the full result, we will later look at how the category of domains and embedding-projection pairs may be used in describing another semantics of the language.

### 5.2 The Representation Theorem

Reynolds [42] defines a representation between domains $D$ and $D^{\prime}$ as a pair $(\phi, \psi)$ of continuous functions $\phi: D \rightarrow D^{\prime}$ and $\psi: D^{\prime} \rightarrow D$ satisfying

$$
\psi \circ \phi \sqsupseteq i d \quad \text { and } \quad \phi \circ \psi \sqsubseteq i d
$$

An element $d \in D$ is said to represent (or be related to by $(\phi, \psi)$ ) an element $d^{\prime} \in D^{\prime}$ if $d \sqsubseteq \psi\left(d^{\prime}\right)$ (or equivalently $\left.\phi(d) \sqsubseteq d^{\prime}\right)$. What Reynolds's representation theorem then essentially says is that, if two environments are related then the values of a term obtained by evaluating under the two environments are also related. Reynolds also remarks that the theorem could also be stated where the first condition above is changed to $\psi \circ \phi=i d$, that is, if $(\phi, \psi)$ is an embedding-projection pair. His initial attempt to prove the abstraction theorem was for the set-theoretic semantics of the Girard-Reynolds calculus. He later showed, however, that this cannot be done [44].

We work with embedding-closure pairs here. If $h: A \rightarrow^{e c} B$ is an embedding-closure pair then $h^{e} \circ h^{c} \sqsupseteq i d$. The pair can also be seen as a representation (between $B$ and A) because $h^{c} \circ h^{e}=i d$ and hence $h^{c} \circ h^{e} \sqsubseteq i d$. We choose to have the condition $h^{c} \circ h^{e}=i d$ in the definition because $h^{e}$ is one-to-one and hence $A$ is normally "smaller" than $B$. The applications we consider in the next three chapters involve relating the two-element lattice 2 and arbitrary finite lattices. This is because we want to use the properties of the smallest instance of a polymorphic function in analysing other instances.

Now, we say that $d \in D$ and $d^{\prime} \in D^{\prime}$ are said to be related by $h: D \rightarrow^{e c} D^{\prime}$ if $h^{e}(d) \sqsupseteq d^{\prime}$, or equivalently if $d \sqsupseteq h^{c}\left(d^{\prime}\right)$. Thus, this definition is essentially the same as the definition of relatedness given above. However, the functions expressing the relationship here have to satisfy the condition $h^{c} \circ h^{e}=i d$

The language we are investigating allows recursive definitions and polymorphic functions. Recall that the polymorphism used here is the one found in the Hindley-Milner type system [35].

We have already seen that the semantics of a term depends on the domains assigned to its free type variables, and also on the values assigned to its free variables. Suppose $S_{1}$ and $S_{2}$ are domain assignments, and that $\eta_{1}$ and $\eta_{2}$ are environments. Given a formula $\Gamma \vdash E: \tau$, our aim is to establish some relationship between the values

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1} \quad \text { and } \quad \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
$$

Clearly these values belong to the spaces $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{1}$ and $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{2}$ respectively. In order to relate the two values we assume that we have embedding-closure pairs
between $S_{1}(t)$ and $S_{2}(t)$ for type variables $t$. The two environments are now said to be related if for each $x, \eta_{1}(x)$ and $\eta_{2}(x)$ are related. Such values are related by some embedding-closure pair between the spaces associated with the type of $x$; the appropriate embedding-closure pair must be obtainable from $S_{1}$ and $S_{2}$.

We have already seen in Chapter 4 that every domain assignment, which is an assignment of domains to type variables, extends to a semantics of types. Now, suppose that $\rho$ is an assignment of embedding-closure pairs to type variables, such that for each $t, \rho(t)$ is an embedding-closure pair from $S_{1}(t)$ to $S_{2}(t)$. For each type $\tau$, we can extend $\rho$ to an embedding-closure pair from $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{1}$ to $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{2}$; this extension establishes a relationship between these spaces corresponding to $\tau$. It shall be denoted by $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket \rho$. The definition is given by induction on the structure of types.

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Im \llbracket b \rrbracket \rho & =i d_{D_{b}}, \quad \text { for base types } b \\
\Im \llbracket t \rrbracket \rho & =\rho(t) \\
\Im \llbracket \tau_{1} \times \tau_{2} \rrbracket \rho & =\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{1} \rrbracket \rho\right) \times\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{2} \rrbracket \rho\right) \\
\Im \llbracket \tau_{1} \rightarrow \tau_{2} \rrbracket \rho & =\left(\lambda k .\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{2} \rrbracket \rho\right)^{e} \circ k \circ\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{1} \rrbracket \rho\right)^{c}, \lambda k .\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{2} \rrbracket \rho\right)^{c} \circ k \circ\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{1} \rrbracket \rho\right)^{e}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

If $\tau$ is closed then $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{1}$ and $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{2}$ are the same and $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket \rho$ is the identity.
We are now ready to state and prove the representation theorem.

Theorem 5.2.1 Let $S_{1}$ and $S_{2}$ be domain assignments. Let $\Gamma$ be a type assignment. Let $\eta_{1}$ and $\eta_{2}$ be environments. Suppose for each type variable $t$, we have an embedding-closure pair $\rho(t): S_{1}(t) \rightarrow{ }^{e c} S_{2}(t)$. Let $h_{\tau}$ stand for $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket \rho$.

If $\eta_{1}$ and $\eta_{2}$ are related, i.e, if for all $x \in \operatorname{dom}(\Gamma)$

$$
h_{\Gamma(x)}^{e}\left(\eta_{1}(x)\right) \sqsupseteq \eta_{2}(x),
$$

then for each formula $\Gamma \vdash E: \tau$ we have

$$
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
$$

The proof is given in the Appendix.

### 5.3 Implications of the Theorem

Our aim is to develop a relationship between the semantics of different instances of a polymorphic function. This relationship is an important consequence of the representation theorem. To see this we first consider the case of one type variable.

Suppose that we have the formula $\Gamma \vdash \Lambda t . E: \forall t . \tau$ for some type assignment $\Gamma$, and $t$ not free in $\Gamma$. For any types $\tau_{1}$ and $\tau_{2}$, we want to see how the semantics of ( $\Lambda t . E)\left[\tau_{1}\right]$ and $(\Lambda t . E)\left[\tau_{2}\right]$ are related. Let $S$ be a domain assignment and $\eta$ be an environment. The relationship between the instances depends on the relationship between $\tau_{1}$ and $\tau_{2}$. Since such relationships are expressed by embedding-closure pairs, assume that $h$ is an embedding-closure pair from $\Im \llbracket \tau_{1} \rrbracket S$ to $\Im \llbracket \tau_{2} \rrbracket S$. For $i=1,2$ define the domain assignments $S_{i}$ by

$$
S_{i}(s)= \begin{cases}\left.\Im \llbracket \tau_{i}\right] S & \text { if } \mathrm{s}=\mathrm{t} \\ S(s) & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Sometimes the notation $S\left[\left(\Im \llbracket \tau_{i} \rrbracket S\right) / t\right]$ is use to express $S_{i}$. In any case, $S_{1}$ and $S_{2}$ are the same except possibly at $t$. Also define $\rho$ by

$$
\rho(s)= \begin{cases}h & \text { if } \mathrm{s}=\mathrm{t} \\ i d & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Now, for every type variable $s, \rho(s)$ is an embedding-closure pair from $S_{1}(s)$ to $S_{2}(s)$. For each type $\tau$, let $h_{\tau}$ be the extension

$$
\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket \rho: \Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{1} \rightarrow^{e c} \Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{2}
$$

Since $t$ is not free in $\Gamma$, for each $x \in \operatorname{dom}(\Gamma), h_{\Gamma(x)}$ must be the identity. Hence $\eta$ is related to itself. Thus, by the representation theorem,

$$
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma,\lceil\llbracket} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta\right) \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta
$$

From the previous chapter we know that for $i=1,2$,

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{i} \eta=\mu_{\Gamma, \tau\left[\tau_{i} / t\right]} \llbracket(\Lambda t . E)\left[\tau_{i}\right] \rrbracket S \eta
$$

Hence,

$$
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau\left[\tau_{1} / t\right]} \llbracket(\Lambda t . E)\left[\tau_{1}\right] \rrbracket S \eta\right) \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau\left[\tau_{2} / t\right]} \llbracket(\Lambda t . E)\left[\tau_{2}\right] \rrbracket S \eta
$$

Assuming that $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{1}$ and $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{2}$ are related by the embedding-closure pair $h$, what we have shown here is how the two instances $(\Lambda t . E)\left[\tau_{1}\right]$ and $(\Lambda t . E)\left[\tau_{2}\right]$ are related. In general, if we have the formula

$$
\Gamma \vdash \Lambda t_{1} \ldots \Lambda t_{n} \cdot E: \forall t_{1} \ldots . . t_{n} \cdot \tau
$$

and types $\tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{n}, \tau_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \tau_{n}^{\prime}$, and embedding-closure pairs

$$
h_{i}: \Im \llbracket \tau_{i} \rrbracket S \rightarrow{ }^{e c} \Im \llbracket \tau_{i}^{\prime} \rrbracket S
$$

for $i=1, \ldots, n$, then it can be shown that

$$
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau\left[\tau_{1} / t_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{n} / t_{n}\right]} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S \eta\right) \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau\left[\tau_{1}^{\prime} / t_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{n}^{\prime} / t_{n}\right]} \llbracket E_{0}^{\prime} \rrbracket S \eta
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
E_{0} & =\left(\Lambda t_{1} \ldots \Lambda t_{n} \cdot E\right)\left[\tau_{1}\right] \ldots\left[\tau_{n}\right] \\
E_{0}^{\prime} & =\left(\Lambda t_{1} \ldots \Lambda t_{n} \cdot E\right)\left[\tau_{1}^{\prime}\right] \ldots\left[\tau_{n}^{\prime}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

Here, $h_{\tau}$ is obtained by extending the $h_{i}$ 's. This is done by first defining two domain assignments $S_{1}$ and $S_{2}$, where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& S_{1}\left(t_{i}\right)=\Im \llbracket \tau_{i} \rrbracket S, \quad \text { and } \\
& S_{2}\left(t_{i}\right)=\Im \llbracket \tau_{i}^{\prime} \rrbracket S,
\end{aligned}
$$

for $i=1, \ldots, n$. For each type variable $t$ different from $t_{i}$, we let $S_{1}(t)=S_{2}(t)=S(t)$. We also define $\rho$ by letting $\rho\left(t_{i}\right)=h_{i}$ for each $i$, and $\rho(t)=i d$ for all $t$ different from $t_{i}$.

### 5.4 Polymorphic Functions as Lax Transformations

Hughes studied a polymorphic first-order language, where types are interpreted as domains and type constructors as functors between some category of domains [21]. The functors are defined from the category of domains and strict continuous functions to the category of domains and continuous functions. It was shown that
polymorphic first-order functions are natural transformations. When higher-order functions are introduced one immediately observes that the functor corresponding to the function type constructor $\rightarrow$ is contravariant in its first argument. We overcome this difficulty by using the category of domains and embedding-closure pairs that was introduced in Chapter 3; the details are given in this section.

### 5.4.1 Type Constructors as Functors

In the previous chapter, for domain assignment $S$ and type $\tau$ we defined the semantics of $\tau$ to be $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S$. Now, suppose that $S_{1}$ and $S_{2}$ are domain assignments, and that for each type variable $t, \rho(t)$ is an embedding-closure pair from $S_{1}(t)$ to $S_{2}(t)$. For any $\tau$, we showed how $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket \rho$ is defined as an embedding-closure pair from $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{1}$ to $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{2}$.

Suppose $\forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} . \tau$ is closed. Consider the mapping which
(i) takes any $n$-tuple of domains $\left(D_{1}, \ldots, D_{n}\right)$ and returns
$\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S\left[D_{1} / t_{1}, \ldots, D_{n} / t_{n}\right]$, and
(ii) given any $n$-tuple ( $h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}$ ) of embedding-closure pairs, with $h_{i}: D_{i} \rightarrow^{e c} D_{i}^{\prime}$ for each $i$, it returns $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket \rho^{\prime}$, where

$$
\rho^{\prime}\left(t_{i}\right)= \begin{cases}h_{i} & \text { for each } i: 1 \leq i \leq n \\ \rho(t) & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

It is not difficult to verify that this mapping is actually a functor from $\left(\mathcal{C}^{e c}\right)^{n}$ to $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$.
Given the closed type $\forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} . \tau$, it is perhaps easier to see what the associated functor from $\left(\mathcal{C}^{e c}\right)^{n}$ to $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$ is, if it is given as $\mathcal{F} \llbracket \forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} . \tau \rrbracket$ and is defined by induction on the structure of $\tau$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{F} \llbracket \forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} \cdot b \rrbracket & =I d \\
\mathcal{F} \llbracket \forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} \cdot t_{i} \rrbracket & =S e l_{i} \\
\mathcal{F} \llbracket \forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} \cdot \tau_{1} \times \tau_{2} \rrbracket & =\left(\mathcal{F} \llbracket \forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} \cdot \tau_{1} \rrbracket\right) \times\left(\mathcal{F} \llbracket \forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} \cdot \tau_{2} \rrbracket\right) \\
\mathcal{F} \llbracket \forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} \cdot \tau_{1} \rightarrow \tau_{2} \rrbracket & =\left(\mathcal{F} \llbracket \forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} \cdot \tau_{1} \rrbracket\right) \rightarrow\left(\mathcal{F} \llbracket \forall t_{1} \ldots t_{n} \cdot \tau_{2} \rrbracket\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

where, $S e l_{i}$ is the functor which maps any $n$-tuple of domains to the $i$-th domain, and also the $i$-th morphism when provided with an $n$-tuple of morphisms. The operators on functors used in the right hand side of the last two equations in the above definition are as defined in Chapter 3.

What we have shown here is how closed polytypes are interpreted as functors on a product of the category of domains and embedding-closure pairs.

### 5.4.2 Polymorphic Functions

Because of what we have already shown, we use type constructors and their corresponding functors interchangeably. Also, we use the notation $\vec{t}$ for the $n$-tuple of type variables $\left(t_{1}, \ldots, t_{n}\right)$. Now, returning to the representation theorem, suppose

$$
\Gamma \vdash \Lambda \vec{t} . E: \forall \vec{t} . F(\vec{t}) \rightarrow G(\vec{t})
$$

where $\Lambda \vec{t} . E$ is a closed term. Let $S$ be any domain assignment and $\eta$ be any environment. For any $n$-tuple of domains ( $D_{1}, \ldots, D_{n}$ ), the semantics of the instance corresponding to this $n$-tuple is given by

$$
f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}}=\mu_{\Gamma, F(\hat{t}) \rightarrow G(\vec{t})} \llbracket E \rrbracket S\left[D_{i} / t_{i}\right] \eta
$$

If for each $i, D_{i}$ is the semantics of some $\tau_{i}$ then

$$
f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}}=\mu_{\Gamma, F\left(\tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{n}\right) \rightarrow G\left(\tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{n}\right)} \llbracket(\Lambda \vec{t} . E)\left[\tau_{1}\right] \ldots\left[\tau_{n}\right] \rrbracket S\left[D_{i} / t_{i}\right] \eta
$$

Now, if for each $i(1 \leq i \leq n)$ we have embedding-closure pairs $h_{i}: D_{i} \rightarrow{ }^{e c} D_{i}^{\prime}$, what the representation theorem says is that

$$
(F \rightarrow G)^{e}\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right)\left(f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}}\right) \sqsupseteq f_{D_{1}^{\prime} \ldots D_{n}^{\prime}}
$$

From this, letting $\vec{h}=\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right)$, we have

$$
\begin{array}{cccc} 
& (F \rightarrow G)^{e}(\vec{h})\left(f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}}\right) & \sqsupseteq & f_{D_{1}^{\prime} \ldots D_{n}^{\prime}} \\
\Rightarrow & \left(\lambda k . G^{e}(\vec{h}) \circ k \circ F^{c}(\vec{h})\right)\left(f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}}\right) & \sqsupseteq & f_{D_{1}^{\prime} \ldots D_{n}^{\prime}} \\
\Rightarrow & G^{e}(\vec{h}) \circ f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}} \circ F^{c}(\vec{h}) & \sqsupseteq & f_{D_{1}^{\prime} \ldots D_{n}^{\prime}} \\
\Rightarrow & G^{e}(\vec{h}) \circ f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}} & \sqsupseteq & f_{D_{1}^{\prime} \ldots D_{n}^{\prime}} \circ F^{e}(\vec{h})
\end{array}
$$

Therefore, $\left\{f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation from $F$ to $G$.

From one of the inequalities above we obtain

$$
f_{D_{1}^{\prime} \ldots D_{n}^{\prime}} \sqsubseteq G^{e}\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right) \circ f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right)
$$

Thus, $G^{e}\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right) \circ f_{D_{1} \ldots D_{n}} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right)$ is an approximation to $f_{D_{1}^{\prime} \ldots D_{n}^{\prime}}$. Since each $h_{i}$ is a morphism from $D_{i}$ to $D_{i}^{\prime}, h_{i}^{e}$ is a one-to-one function. Thus, each $D_{i}$ is in some sense "smaller" than $D_{i}^{\prime}$. Therefore, the inequality above is a means of obtaining approximations to instances of a polymorphic function from smaller instances.

The language in Chapter 4 does not allow a polymorphic equality function. It was excluded because its semantics fails to be a lax natural transformation. To see this, consider the collection $\left\{e q_{D}\right\}$ of continuous functions $e q_{D}: D \times D \rightarrow B o o l$ where

$$
e q_{D}(x, y)= \begin{cases}\perp & \text { if } x=\perp \text { or } y=\perp \\ \text { True } & \text { if } x=y \\ \text { False } & \text { if } x \neq y\end{cases}
$$

If we were to treat equality as a polymorphic function it would have the type $\forall t . t \times$ $t \rightarrow$ bool. To test if the collection is a lax natural transformation, we consider the functors $F$ and $G$ where $F(A)=A \times A$ and $G(A)=B o o l$ for all domains $A$. The actions of these functors on morphisms are not difficult to find out. Now, choose $A$, $B$ and $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ such that $h^{e}$ is not strict. Clearly,

$$
\left(e q_{B} \circ\left(h^{e} \times h^{e}\right)\right)(\perp, \perp)=\text { True and } e q_{A}(\perp, \perp)=\perp
$$

But

$$
e q_{B} \circ\left(h^{e} \times h^{e}\right)=e q_{B} \circ F^{e}(h) \text { and } e q_{A}=G^{e}(h) \circ e q_{A}
$$

Thus, the condition

$$
e q_{B} \circ F^{e}(h) \sqsubseteq G^{e}(h) \circ e q_{A}
$$

does not hold. Hence, $\left\{e q_{D}\right\}$ is not a lax natural transformation. Not treating equality as a polymorphic function should not be surprising. In fact, it is consistent with the approach followed in the Haskell language [18].

### 5.4.3 The First-Order Case

We have shown that polytypes can be interpreted as functors and polymorphic functions as lax natural transformations. In the case of the first-order subset of the language, it can be shown that polymorphic functions are natural transformations when one uses the closure components as morphisms-actually strictness is all that is necessary. On the other hand, naturality is not obtained if we use the embedding components as morphisms.

### 5.5 Semantic Polymorphic Invariance

We have already mentioned that Abramsky and Jensen [5] have used a relational approach to describe the semantics of a polymorphic language. The main result in [5] is the semantic polymorphic invariance of strictness. It is possible to give an alternative proof of this result by using the semantics described in this thesis. To see this, suppose $A$ has a top element so that we are guaranteed to have a morphism $h: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow^{e c} A^{\dagger}$. We can choose $h$ so that $h^{e}$ is strict. Let $f$ be a lax natural transformation from $F$ to $G$ and $f_{2}$ be strict. Since $h^{e}$ is strict so is $G^{e}(h)$. Now, since

$$
f_{A} \sqsubseteq G^{e}(h) \circ f_{2} \circ F^{c}(h),
$$

and $F^{c}(h)$ is always strict, we have

$$
f_{A}(\perp)=\perp
$$

That is, if a function is strict at the 2-instance then it is strict at all instances. On the other hand, we need to prove that the strictness of $f_{A}$ implies that of $f_{2}$. To do this we need to use embedding-projection pairs.

## The Representation Theorem using Embedding-Projection Pairs

Embedding-projection pairs can be used to provide a relational semantics to the language. Except for the difference in the languages, this semantics gives a rep-

[^1]resentation theorem which is essentially Reynolds's theorem of [42]. Polymorphic functions now become lax natural transformations in $\mathcal{C}^{e p}$. A consequence of this is that from the smallest instance of a polymorphic function one can build an approximation from below to any instance. In particular, if $f$ is a lax natural transformation between the functors $F$ and $G$ from $\mathcal{C}^{\text {ep }}$ to itself, then for any morphism $k: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow^{e p} A$ we have
$$
f_{A}(\perp) \sqsupseteq G^{e}(k)\left(f_{2}\left(F^{p}(k)(\perp)\right)\right)
$$

If $f_{A}$ is strict then

$$
G^{e}(k)\left(f_{\mathbf{2}}\left(F^{p}(k)(\perp)\right)\right)=\perp
$$

Since $F^{p}(k)$ is strict and $G^{e}(k)$ is $\perp$-reflecting, $f_{2}(\perp)=\perp$. Therefore, this provides the other half of the invariance proof. Thus the combination of the two results gives the semantic polymorphic invariance of strictness.

### 5.6 Summary

The relational approach has been used in various ways in providing semantics to several languages. The relations which are used in the semantics described in this chapter arise out of embedding-closure pairs. This in turn gives rise to a relationship between different instances. By working in a different category we have managed to overcome the problem which arose out of the contravariance of the function type functor in the category of domains and continuous functions. To a certain extent, therefore, we have a generalisation of Hughes's results on first-order functions, where type constructors are interpreted as functors. In the category of domains and embedding-closure pairs, polymorphic functions are not necessarily natural transformations except in the first-order case. Our primary concern in this thesis is to work with approximations obtainable from the smallest instances of polymorphic functions. However, the combination of results from this semantics, and the one which uses embedding-projection pairs has also given us a proof of the semantic polymorphic invariance of strictness.

## Chapter 6

## Strictness Analysis

### 6.1 Introduction

Abstract interpretation was applied in the strictness analysis of a simply typed $\lambda$ calculus with higher-order functions over flat domains by Burn et al [11]. The aim here is to show how it can be applied in the strictness analysis of the language defined in Chapter 4. The significance of this language is that it allows polymorphic function definitions.

We have already mentioned that Abramsky proved the polymorphic invariance of strictness analysis [1], and that a proof of the semantic polymorphic invariance of strictness was given by Abramsky and Jensen [5]. However, in practice, invariance is not entirely satisfactory and hence it is necessary to look for other approaches to polymorphic functions. When different instances of the same polymorphic function are used in a program, there is useful information that cannot be obtained from invariance. On the other hand, as pointed out by Abramsky in [1], performing the computation of different instances of the same function as if the instances have no connection between them is inefficient. These issues were discussed in greater detail and an example which highlights the problem was given in Chapter 1. In the case of first-order functions, Hughes proposed a way of obtaining strictness information about any instance of a polymorphic function from that of the simplest [21]. To do this, he first provided a semantics of the language where type constructors are
interpreted as functors on some category of domains, and polymorphic functions are natural transformations.

Here, we use the relational semantics described earlier to obtain, in some sense, a generalisation to higher-order functions of Hughes's results about first-order functions. It is a generalisation because type constructors are interpreted as functors, albeit on a slightly different category of domains. Although not all polymorphic functions are natural transformations, they are lax natural transformations. This provides a way of obtaining strictness information about any instance of a polymorphic function from an analysis of the smallest.

### 6.2 Abstraction of Types

The abstract interpretation for strictness analysis is done by interpreting every term on a lattice. Before describing how this is done, we introduce the notion of a lattice type. Lattice types are types that are defined by the type system in Chapter 4 when restricted to have 2 as the only basic type. To analyse a term in the original language, the type expressions occurring in it are replaced by lattice type expressions, and then the constants are replaced by new appropriate constants. The new term is then evaluated to obtain a value in a lattice. Note that, strictly speaking, there are two type systems (ordinary types and lattice types); for simplicity the same notation is used.

To describe the procedure more formally, first, we define a function mapping ordinary types to lattice types. The function $A b s$, mapping ordinary types to lattice types is defined by induction on the structure of types as follows.

$$
\begin{aligned}
A b s \text { int } & =\mathbf{2} \\
A b s \text { bool } & =\mathbf{2} \\
A b s t & =t \\
A b s\left(\tau_{1} \times \tau_{2}\right) & =\left(A b s \tau_{1}\right) \times\left(A b s \tau_{2}\right) \\
A b s\left(\tau_{1} \rightarrow \tau_{2}\right) & =\left(A b s \tau_{1}\right) \rightarrow\left(A b s \tau_{2}\right) \\
A b s(\forall t . \sigma) & =\forall t .(A b s \sigma)
\end{aligned}
$$

It simply replaces int and bool by 2 wherever they occur in a type.

### 6.3 Abstract Functions

The abstract interpretation that will be defined later can be regarded as a (nonstandard) semantics. From such an interpretation, information about semantic properties of functions is obtained. In order to show that this information is correct, it is necessary to relate this semantics to the standard semantics.

The semantics of a lattice type is a lattice. For each lattice type $\tau$ (which is not a polytype), a lattice $B_{\tau}$ over which terms of this type are interpreted is defined. The symbol 2 is used in two ways; as a lattice type, and the two-element lattice which is the semantics of the type. Lattices corresponding to other types are defined in the same way as the semantics of ordinary types in Chapter 4. It is actually possible to use the same notation, that is, if $S$ is a lattice assignment (in this case, it is a domain assignment associating type variables with finite lattices), $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S$ stands for the semantics of the lattice type $\tau$. This may be defined by induction on the structure of $\tau$. Note that $\Im \llbracket 2 \rrbracket S=2$; the rest is straightforward.

For each monotype $\tau$, the abstraction map $a b s_{\tau}$ is defined from the domain corresponding to $\tau$ to the lattice corresponding to Abs $\tau$. Except when $\tau$ is a product of types, these functions are defined in [11]; they are also provided in Chapter 1. Now, for monotypes $\tau_{1}$ and $\tau_{2}, a b s_{\tau_{1} \times \tau_{2}}$ is defined by

$$
a b s_{\tau_{1} \times \tau_{2}}(a, b)=\left(a b s_{\tau_{1}} a, a b s_{\tau_{2}} b\right)
$$

The function $A b s$ may also be defined to act on the domains corresponding to monotypes; it is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\text { Abs Int } & =\mathbf{2} \\
\text { Abs Bool } & =\mathbf{2} \\
\text { Abs }\left(D_{1} \times D_{2}\right) & =\left(\text { Abs } D_{1}\right) \times\left(\text { Abs } D_{2}\right) \\
\text { Abs }\left(D_{1} \rightarrow D_{2}\right) & =\left(\text { Abs } D_{1}\right) \rightarrow\left(\text { Abs } D_{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that $a b s_{\tau}$ is a function from $\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S$ to $\Im \llbracket A b s \tau \rrbracket S^{\prime}$. Since $\tau$ does not have variables occurring freely in it, these spaces are independent of $S$ and $S^{\prime}$. Several properties of the abstract functions are given in [11].

### 6.4 Abstract Interpretation

In the notation used here, the abstract interpretation in [11] is done by replacing each type $\tau$ by $A b s \tau$, integer and boolean constants are replaced by 1 , which is a constant of type 2. New operators are introduced to replace the usual operators including, for example, the arithmetic ones. The new term obtained when the replacing process is complete is evaluated on lattices to get strictness information.

### 6.4.1 A Language for Abstract Interpretation

For reference purposes we will use $\mathcal{L}$ to denote the language of concrete terms that was introduced in Chapter 4. Here we shall study a similar language $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$ of abstract terms. The difference, as far as types are concerned, is that the only basic type in $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$ is $\mathbf{2}$. Thus its type system involves only lattice types. Obviously such a language cannot have terms involving integer and boolean constants, and thus nor will it have the conditional expression if $\tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2}$. On the other hand, the following are added to the definition of terms

$$
\text { guard } \tau E_{0} E_{1} \quad \text { and } \quad \text { or } \tau E_{0} E_{1}
$$

where $\tau$ is a lattice type. It is necessary to make changes to the typing rules as well. The typing rules for $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$ are all the rules for $\mathcal{L}$ except COND, the rule involving the typing of if $\tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2}$. Obviously, the typing rules for this and certain constants should be dropped. On the other hand, two new rules are introduced.

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\Gamma \vdash E_{0}: 2 \quad \Gamma \vdash E_{1}: \tau}{\Gamma \vdash \operatorname{guard} \tau E_{0} E_{1}: \tau}  \tag{AND}\\
& \frac{\Gamma \vdash E_{0}: \tau \quad \Gamma \vdash E_{1}: \tau}{\Gamma \vdash \text { or } \tau E_{0} E_{1}: \tau} \tag{OR}
\end{align*}
$$

There are also two constants, 0 and 1 , in $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$ and it is assumed that they have 2 as their type.

### 6.4.2 Semantics of $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$

To define a semantics of $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$, we use a category of finite lattices. For a lattice type environment $\Gamma$ and a lattice type $\tau$, we define the semantic functions $\nu_{\Gamma, \tau}$ in a similar way as the semantic functions (the $\mu$ 's of the previous chapter) for the language $\mathcal{L}$. Because of the similarity in the definitions of the semantic functions for both languages, we consider only the new terms; they are of the form guard $\tau E_{0} E_{1}$ and or $\tau E_{0} E_{1}$. The family of functions $\left\{\triangleright_{A}\right\}$ and $\left\{\sqcup_{A}\right\}$ were introduced in Chapter 3 for this purpose. Now, using the infix notation, the definitions are given by

$$
\nu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \text { guard } \tau E_{0} E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta=\nu_{\Gamma, 2} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S \eta \triangleright_{A} \nu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta
$$

and

$$
\nu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \operatorname{or} \tau E_{0} E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta=\nu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S \eta \sqcup_{A} \nu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta
$$

where $A=\Im \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S$.
We can now use the results of the investigation of the semantics of $\mathcal{L}$ in Chapter 5 for $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$. Several properties of the semantic functions of $\mathcal{L}$ hold for the semantic functions of $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$. In particular, it is not difficult to show that the representation theorem holds. Observe that the only new collections are $\left\{\triangleright_{A}\right\}$ and $\left\{\sqcup_{A}\right\}$, and it was already shown in Chapter 3 that they are both lax natural transformations. Therefore, all polymorphic functions in $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$ are lax natural transformations between functors on the category of finite lattices and embedding-closure pairs.

Polymorphic first-order functions are actually natural transformations between functors on the category of finite lattices which has the closure components of embeddingclosure pairs as morphisms. Recall that this is not the case when the embedding components are used.

The fact that the representation theorem holds allows us to relate separate instances of abstract polymorphic functions, and deduce facts about all instances by studying just one.

### 6.4.3 Connection between $\mathcal{L}$ and $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$

We prefer to work with two languages for reasons of uniformity in the semantics, that is, in order that all polymorphic functions are lax natural transformations. If we had a single language containing terms like or $\tau E_{0} E_{1}$ whose semantics is given in terms of the collection $\left\{\sqcup_{A}\right\}$, then the collection cannot be a lax natural transformation between functors on the category of domains and embedding-closure pairs. This is because $\sqcup_{A}$ is not defined for arbitrary domains $A$ (non-lattices).

To perform strictness analysis on a term $E$ in $\mathcal{L}$, first, it is translated to a term $E^{\prime}$ in $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$ and then the new term is interpreted over finite lattices. The interpretation is simply to evaluate $E^{\prime}$ using the semantics described above. The translation is done by replacing every type $\tau$, occurring in the expression, by $A b s \tau$, and then integer and boolean constants are replaced by the appropriate terms of type 2. Any term of the form

$$
\text { if } \tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2}
$$

is translated to

$$
\text { guard } \tau^{\prime} E_{0}^{\prime}\left(\text { or } \tau^{\prime} E_{1}^{\prime} E_{2}^{\prime}\right)
$$

where $\tau^{\prime}=A b s \tau$ and each $E_{i}^{\prime}$ is the result of translating $E_{i}$. Also every term of the form

$$
E_{1} \oplus E_{2}
$$

is translated to

$$
\text { guard } 2 E_{1}^{\prime} E_{2}^{\prime}
$$

where $\oplus$ is any one of the arithmetic operators :,,$+- *$ or / (note that the semantics of guard 2 is $\Pi_{2}$ ). In fact this should be done for all built-in binary operators that are strict in both their arguments. The translation of other terms is straightforward.

Suppose $\Gamma$ is the type environment $\left\{x_{1}: \sigma_{1}, \ldots x_{n}: \sigma_{n}\right\}$. If the formula

$$
\Gamma \vdash E: \tau
$$

can be obtained from the typing rules of $\mathcal{L}$, then

$$
\Gamma^{\prime} \vdash E^{\prime}: A b s \tau
$$

can be obtained from those of $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$, where

$$
\Gamma^{\prime}=\left\{x_{1}: A b s \sigma_{1}, \ldots x_{n}: A b s \sigma_{n}\right\}
$$

by straightforward substitution in the derivation of $\Gamma \vdash E: \tau$. Now, the standard semantics is given by

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta,
$$

and the non-standard semantics of its translation is given by

$$
\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s \tau} \llbracket E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}
$$

where $S^{\prime}$ is a lattice environment, i.e, an assignment of lattices to type variables, and $\eta^{\prime}$ is an assignment of values from lattices to ordinary variables. Here, $S^{\prime}(t)=$ $A b s S(t)$ and $\eta^{\prime}(x)=a b s(\eta(x))$.

Notation. The smallest family of domains containing Bool and Int, and that is closed under both $\times$ and $\rightarrow$ will be denoted by $\mathcal{D}$. Similarly, $\mathcal{B}$ will denote the smallest family of finite lattices that contains 2, and that is also closed under $\times$ and $\rightarrow$.

### 6.5 Safety

In a previous section abstract functions were introduced. The abstract functions relate the semantics of terms in the language $\mathcal{L}$ and that of their translation in $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$. The following proposition describes the relationship.

Proposition 6.5.1 Suppose we have the formula $\Gamma \vdash E: \tau$, and that $S$ is a domain assignment that assigns type variables domains from $\mathcal{D}$. Let $\eta$ be an environment. Let $S^{\prime}$ be the lattice assignment such that for any type variable $t$, $S^{\prime}(t)=A b s S(t)$.

If $\eta^{\prime}$ is any environment such that for any variable $x \in \operatorname{dom}(\Gamma)$

$$
a b s_{\Gamma(x)}(\eta(x)) \sqsubseteq \eta^{\prime}(x)
$$

then

$$
a b s_{\tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right) \sqsubseteq \nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s} \llbracket E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}
$$

The proof is given in the Appendix.
From this proposition it is not difficult to show that the information relating to the strictness of functions obtained from the non-standard semantics is correct. Moreover, for any monomorphic term $E$, the semantics of $E^{\prime}$, given by the semantic functions for $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$, is the same as the value of the function asem at $E$ (the definition of asem is given in Chapter 1).

### 6.6 Polymorphic Functions

We have now provided the definition of the $\nu$ 's on terms with types from the first class (that is, not polytypes). The definition is similar to that of $\mu$. The semantics of a polymorphic function is the collection of the semantics of all its monomorphic instances. From what was shown in the previous chapter, these instances are related in a certain way.

Suppose $\Lambda \vec{t} . E$ is a closed polymorphic term in $\mathcal{L}$ whose type is $\forall \vec{t} . F(\vec{t}) \rightarrow G(\vec{t})$. The term can be translated into $\Lambda \vec{t} . E^{\prime}$ in $\mathcal{L}^{\prime}$ and it has the type $\forall \vec{t} . F^{\prime}(\vec{t}) \rightarrow G^{\prime}(\vec{t})$, where $F^{\prime}(\vec{t})$ and $G^{\prime}(\vec{t})$ are obtained by replacing the types int and bool in $F(t)$ and $G(t)$ by 2. Now, both $F^{\prime}$ and $G^{\prime}$ can be interpreted as functors from $\left(\mathcal{A}^{e c}\right)^{n}$ to $\mathcal{A}^{e c}$. Moreover, the semantics of this new term, $\Lambda \vec{t} . E^{\prime}$, is a lax natural transformation from $F^{\prime}$ to $G^{\prime}$. Normally, we will drop the superscripts and write $F$ and $G$ for $F^{\prime}$ and $G^{\prime}$.

Suppose $\tau_{1}, \ldots, \tau_{n}, \tau_{1}^{\prime}, \ldots, \tau_{n}^{\prime}$ are monotypes. For $i=1, \ldots, n$, let $B_{i}$ and $B_{i}^{\prime}$ denote the finite lattices which are the semantics of $A b s \tau_{i}$ and $A b s \tau_{i}^{\prime}$ respectively. Suppose also that for each $i, h_{i}: B_{i} \rightarrow^{e c} B_{i}^{\prime}$ is any embedding-closure pair, and $\vec{h}=\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right)$. Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \nu \llbracket\left(\Lambda \vec{t} . E^{\prime}\right)\left[A b s \tau_{1}^{\prime}\right] \ldots\left[A b s \tau_{n}^{\prime}\right] \rrbracket \\
& \quad \sqsubseteq G^{e}(\vec{h}) \circ \nu \llbracket\left(\Lambda \vec{t} . E^{\prime}\right)\left[A b s \tau_{1}\right] \ldots\left[A b s \tau_{n}\right] \rrbracket \circ F^{c}(\vec{h})
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\Lambda \vec{t} . E^{\prime}$ is closed, the value $\nu \llbracket \Lambda \vec{t} . E^{\prime} \rrbracket S \eta$ is independent of lattice assignments $S$ and environments $\eta$. That is why they are omitted here. Also, the usual subscripts that come with $\nu$ are omitted.

In general, the semantics of $\Lambda \vec{t} . E^{\prime}$ may be expressed as the collection $\left\{g_{B_{1} \ldots B_{n}}^{\mathcal{S}}\right\}$, where the $B_{i}$ 's range over all finite lattices and

$$
g_{B_{1} \ldots B_{n}}^{S}=\nu \llbracket E^{\prime} \rrbracket S \eta
$$

where $S\left(t_{i}\right)=B_{i}$ for each $i(1 \leq i \leq n)$. The superscript $\mathcal{S}$ (for strictness) is used to distinguish this from other non-standard semantics.

If each $h_{i}$ is a morphism from 2 to $B_{i}$, then

$$
g_{B_{1} \ldots B_{n}}^{\mathcal{S}} \sqsubseteq G^{e}(\vec{h}) \circ g_{2 \ldots 2}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{c}(\vec{h})
$$

Therefore, we obtain an approximate value for $g_{B_{1} \ldots B_{n}}^{\mathcal{S}}$ from $g_{2 \ldots 2}^{\mathcal{S}}$. The significance of this is that the latter is normally less expensive to compute.

This particular approximation is from above, and is thus appropriate for strictness analysis. Using $G^{e}\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right) \circ g_{2 \ldots 2}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{1}, \ldots, h_{n}\right)$ instead of $g_{B_{1} \ldots B_{n}}^{S}$ in the analysis never leads to any incorrect strictness information. This is the central reason why we chose to use embedding-closure pairs in describing the semantics of the language.

At this point it is legitimate to ask how good the approximation is. We will assume that $n=1$ for simplicity in presentation. Recall that if $h: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow^{e c} B$ is chosen so that $h^{e}$ is strict, then whenever $g_{2}^{\mathcal{S}}$ is strict so is $G^{e}(h) \circ g_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{c}(h)$. But if $h^{e}$ is not strict, the strictness of $g_{2}^{\mathcal{S}}$ does not imply that of $G^{e}(h) \circ g_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{c}(h)$. In general, although these new functions may be used instead of $g_{B}^{\mathcal{S}}$, they may not be very good
approximations. To obtain a better result, we take the greatest lower bound of all possible approximations. This is because the following holds

$$
g_{B}^{\mathcal{S}} \sqsubseteq \Pi G^{e}(h) \circ g_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{c}(h)
$$

The greatest lower bound is taken over all possible $h$ 's.
There are many cases where computing a single $G^{e}(h) \circ g_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{c}(h)$ is significantly cheaper than computing $g_{B}^{\mathcal{S}}$. There are $(|B|-1)$ embedding-closure pairs from 2 to $B$, where $|B|$ is the number of elements of $B$. As a result, if $B$ is a big lattice then computing the greatest lower bound may be expensive. As was shown in Chapter 3 , there are situations where a smaller number of embedding-closure pairs is enough to obtain the same approximation. This is particularly the case with first-order functions; recall the use of meet-irreducible elements of $B$. Moreover, the greatest lower bound of the functions in the first-order case is exactly $g_{B}^{S}$, i.e,

$$
g_{B}^{\mathcal{S}}=\Pi G^{e}(h) \circ g_{2}^{S} \circ F^{c}(h)
$$

This follows from the fact that polymorphic first-order functions are natural transformations when using the closure components as morphisms, and that $\Pi G^{e}(h) \circ G^{c}(h)=i d$ for all first-order type functors (recall that the details were given Chapter 3).

## Example

To illustrate the ideas discussed above, let us consider the following simple example.

$$
f=\Lambda \alpha . \mathrm{fix} \tau(\lambda g: \tau . \lambda x: \text { bool. } \lambda y: \text { int. } \lambda z: \alpha . \text { if } \alpha x z(g x(y-1) z))
$$

where $\tau=$ bool $\rightarrow$ int $\rightarrow \alpha \rightarrow \alpha$. Notice that $\alpha$ is a type variable.
If the abstract interpretation of $f$ is given to be $f^{\mathcal{S}}$, then its value at the simplest type, i.e $f_{2}^{\mathcal{S}}$, is given by the following table

| $x$ | $y$ | $z$ | $f_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} x y z$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 |
| 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 |
| 0 | 1 | 1 | 0 |
| 1 | 0 | 0 | 0 |
| 1 | 0 | 1 | 1 |
| 1 | 1 | 0 | 0 |
| 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |

This table may be obtained by iterative means. Now, if $f_{2 \times 2}^{\mathcal{S}}$, the abstract interpretation of the function at the type $2 \times 2$ has to be computed, then a number of iterations must again be performed. But performing such computations every time we consider an instance of the same polymorphic function is very expensive. The method described above provides an approximation to $f_{2 \times 2}^{\mathcal{S}}$ by using $f_{2}^{\mathcal{S}}$. That is,

$$
f_{\mathbf{2} \times 2}^{\mathcal{S}} \sqsubseteq \prod_{a}\left(\lambda u .\left(\lambda l . h_{a}^{e} \circ l \circ h_{a}^{c}\right) \circ u \circ i d^{c}\right) \circ f_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ i d^{c}
$$

The $a$ 's range over all non-T elements of $\mathbf{2} \times \mathbf{2}$, and thus the $h_{a}$ 's are the embeddingclosure pairs from 2 to $2 \times 2$. Note that $i d^{c}$ is the identity function, where $i d$ is the identity embedding-closure pair. In this example, the greatest lower bound may be taken over two $a$ 's to obtain the same result. To see this, for any non-T element $a$ of $2 \times 2$ let

$$
k_{a}=\left(\lambda u .\left(\lambda l . h_{a}^{e} \circ l \circ h_{a}^{c}\right) \circ u \circ i d^{c}\right) \circ f_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ i d^{c}
$$

Now, for any $x, y$, and $z$ we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
k_{a} x y z & =\left(\lambda u .\left(\lambda l . h_{a}^{e} \circ l \circ h_{a}^{c}\right) \circ u \circ i d^{c}\right) \circ f_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ i d^{c} x y z \\
& =\left(\lambda u .\left(\lambda l . h_{a}^{e} \circ l \circ h_{a}^{c}\right) \circ u \circ i d^{c}\right)\left(f_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} x\right) y z \\
& =\left(\lambda l . h_{a}^{e} \circ l \circ h_{a}^{c}\right)\left(f_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} x y\right) z \\
& =\left(h_{a}^{e} \circ\left(f_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} x y\right) \circ h_{a}^{c}\right) z \\
& =h_{a}^{e}\left(f_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} x y\left(h_{a}^{c} z\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

From this and the definition of the $h_{a}$ 's it is not difficult to build the following table.

| $z$ | $k_{(0,0)} x y z$ | $k_{(0,1)} x y z$ | $k_{(1,0)} x y z$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $(0,0)$ | $(0,0)$ | $(0,1)$ | $(1,0)$ |
| $(0,1)$ | $h_{(0,0)}^{e}(x)$ | $(0,1)$ | $h_{(1,0)}^{e}(x)$ |
| $(1,0)$ | $h_{(0,0)}^{e}(x)$ | $h_{(0,1)}^{e}(x)$ | $(1,0)$ |
| $(1,1)$ | $h_{(0,0)}^{e}(x)$ | $h_{(0,1)}^{e}(x)$ | $h_{(1,0)}^{e}(x)$ |

It is now easy to see that

$$
k_{(0,1)} \sqcap k_{(1,0)} \sqsubseteq k_{(0,0)}
$$

Therefore, when taking the greatest lower bound, $k_{(0,0)}$ can be ignored. Moreover, in this particular case the result obtained this way gives $f_{2 \times 2}^{\mathcal{S}}$ exactly. That is,

$$
f_{2 \times 2}^{\mathcal{S}}=k_{(0,1)} \sqcap k_{(1,0)}
$$

Therefore, in this example no price, in terms of accuracy, is paid by resorting to the method which normally gives approximate values.

In general, whenever $B$ is large it may be necessary to consider the greatest lower bound of only a smaller number of functions. In the first-order case restricting to morphisms $h_{a}$, where $a$ is meet-irreducible gives the exact result. It may be a good idea to use this in the general case as well. Obviously, this in turn is an approximation of the greatest lower bound. For exact values one has to compute $f_{B}^{\mathcal{S}}$ directly. But this is exactly what we wanted to avoid in the first place. However, in the case of non-recursive functions it is better to compute all the necessary instances directly, because it is efficient and we get exact values.

### 6.7 Monomorphic Functions

So far, we have shown that a useful approximation to the abstract interpretation of an instance of a polymorphic function may be found from that of the smallest. However, there are monomorphic functions that are not instances of some polymorphic function. The computation of the abstract interpretation of such functions may be expensive; this normally involves finding fixed points.

To deal with such problems, Hunt introduced approximate fixed ponts [27]. Suppose $B$ is a large lattice and $f: B \rightarrow B$ is a continuous function. He proposes to pick
a lattice $A$ "smaller" than $B$, and then define a function $g: A \rightarrow A$ that in some sense "represents" $f$. Since $A$ is smaller, computing the fixed point of $g$ is hopefully less expensive than that of $f$. From this, an approximation to the fixed point of $f$ is obtained. The function $f$ and $g$ are related by an inequality of the form

$$
f \sqsubseteq h_{2} \circ g \circ h_{1},
$$

where $h_{1}: B \rightarrow A$ and $h_{2}: A \rightarrow B$ are some functions which are defined by induction on the structure of the lattices $A$ and $B$. Seward observed that $\left(h_{1}, h_{2}\right)$ forms a special embedding-closure pair from $A$ to $B$, and suggested the use of more embedding-closure pairs so that a better approximation may be obtained [47]. When $A$ is the lattice 2, the embedding-closure pair used by Hunt is $h_{\perp}$, in our notation of Chapter 3.

Although the function $f$ is not necessarily an instance of a polymorphic function, the procedure above is related to the analysis of polymorphic functions. Recall that fix is a lax natural transformation. Now, if $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ is an embedding-closure pair then

$$
f i x_{B} \sqsubseteq h^{e} \circ f i x_{A} \circ\left(\lambda k . h^{c} \circ k \circ h^{e}\right)
$$

Hence,

$$
f i x_{B}(f) \sqsubseteq h^{e}\left(f i x_{A}\left(h^{c} \circ f \circ h^{e}\right)\right)
$$

Since $h^{c} \circ f \circ h^{e}$ is a function from $A$ to $A$, if $A$ is small then computing $h^{e}\left(f i x_{A}\left(h^{c} \circ f \circ h^{e}\right)\right)$ is likely to be less expensive. To obtain a better approximation, it is possible to consider the greatest lower bound of several functions of this form. If in the above inequality, $A$ is the lattice 2 then

$$
f i x_{B}(f) \sqsubseteq \Pi h_{a}^{e}\left(f i x_{2}\left(h_{a}^{c} \circ f \circ h_{a}^{e}\right)\right),
$$

where $a$ ranges over the non-T elements of $B$. It is not difficult to show that

$$
\Pi h_{a}^{e}\left(f i x_{2}\left(h_{a}^{c} \circ f \circ h_{a}^{e}\right)\right)=\Pi\{a \in(B-\{\top\}) \mid f(a) \sqsubseteq a\}
$$

Observe that, in the verification of this statement, for any function $k: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow \mathbf{2}$ it is always the case that

$$
\operatorname{fix}_{2}(k)=k(0)
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{a}^{e}\left(f i x_{\mathbf{2}}\left(h_{a}^{c} \circ f \circ h_{a}^{e}\right)\right) & =h_{a}^{e}\left(h_{a}^{c}\left(f\left(h_{a}^{e}(0)\right)\right)\right) \\
& =h_{a}^{e}\left(h_{a}^{c}(f(a))\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand, one of Tarski's descriptions of the least fixed point of $f$ is given as

$$
\rceil\{a \in B \mid f(a) \sqsubseteq a\}
$$

in [49]. This expression is the same as the right hand side of the above inequality, when it is assumed that $\Pi\}=T$. Therefore,

$$
\operatorname{fix}_{B}(f)=\Pi h_{a}^{e}\left(f i x_{\mathbf{2}}\left(h_{a}^{c} \circ f \circ h_{a}^{e}\right)\right)
$$

It is important to note that this is a statement about accuracy. An approximate value may be obtained by using only a few functions. In any case, the preceding discussion presents an improvement on Hunt's proposal because of its use of the greatest lower bound. In fact, using his method gives the approximation

$$
h_{\perp}^{e}\left(f i x_{\mathbf{2}}\left(h_{\perp}^{c} \circ f \circ h_{\perp}^{e}\right)\right)
$$

Since $h_{\perp}^{e}$ is a two-valued function, this expression is equal to $\perp_{B}$ or to $T_{B}$ and hence, in some cases, is not a good approximation to fix $_{B}(f)$. If the expression is $\perp_{B}$ then fix $_{B}(f)$ is also $\perp_{B}$, which is the exact value. Otherwise, it is $T_{B}$ and this does not carry any information at all, because we already know that every element of $B$ is bounded by $\mathrm{T}_{B}$ from above. It must be said, however, that Hunt's suggestion does not always imply the use of 2. In particular, if for example $B$ is the product $B_{1} \times B_{2}$, then a lattice of the form $A_{1} \times A_{2}$ where each $A_{i}$ is smaller than $B_{i}$ is used. Therefore, an approximation better than the one which results from the use of 2 is obtainable even when only a single embedding-closure pair is used.

### 6.8 Summary

The semantic approach to polymorphic functions, which we have developed, has provided a way of using the result of an analysis of simple instances to obtain information about more complex instances. Seward has implemented this method, giving
impressive performance figures [48]. He discusses these results and the usefulness of the information so obtained; we will see concrete examples in the next chapter.

## Chapter 7

## Analysis of Lists

### 7.1 Introduction

The language we have been investigating so far does not have some of the common structure types. In this chapter, we consider the case of lists. In the monomorphic case, Wadler defined an abstract interpretation that detects some semantic properties of functions defined on lists [52]. He introduced abstract domains appropriate for doing this interpretation.

Our main concern here is polymorphism. We extend our language to include lists, and establish a relationship between the abstract interpretation of different instances of polymorphic functions. Hence, as in Chapter 6, we have a method of using the abstract interpretation of the smallest instance in other instances.

Unfortunately, we are unable to prove the correctness of our method when using Wadler's abstract domains; though we could not find counter examples either. F. Nielson and H.R. Nielson in their work on generalising Wadler's method have used different abstract domains [38]. We use these domains in our study of polymorphic functions.

One of the results that we proved in Chapter 5 is the semantic polymorphic invariance of strictness. We have already remarked that this is not a new result;

Abramsky and Jensen have already given a proof in [5]. Our proof was given simply to demonstrate that this property follows also from the semantics which involves embedding-closure pairs. As explained in Chapter 1, in the monomorphic case, Wadler's analysis detects different kinds of strictness of functions defined on lists. Consequently, in the case of polymorphic functions, it may be desirable to investigate the semantic polymorphic invariance of such properties. This would generalise the work of Abramsky and Jensen [5]. This will be done in Section 6.

### 7.2 Strictness Properties

We consider functions defined in terms of the case-statement. First, we define

```
case(a,f,nil) = a
case(a,f,cons x xs) = f(x,xs)
```

The type of this function is $\forall t . \forall s . s \times((t \times[t]) \rightarrow s) \times[t] \rightarrow s$. We investigate the semantic properties of the function $g$ which is given by

$$
g \text { ys }=\operatorname{case}(a, f, y s)
$$

for some fixed a and $f$. For the purposes of the discussion in this and the next section, we assume that case and $g$ are monomorphic. Suppose case and $g$ are their respective semantics, where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{case}(a, f, \perp) & =\perp \\
\operatorname{case}(a, f,[]) & =a \\
\operatorname{case}(a, f, \text { cons } x x s) & =f(x, x s)
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
g(y s)=\operatorname{case}(a, f, y s)
$$

Among the properties studied by Wadler are tail-strictness and hyper-strictness. The function $g$ is said to be
(i) tail-strict, if $g(x s)=\perp$ for all lists $x s$ which are infinite or partial, and
(ii) hyper-strict, if $g(x s)=\perp$ for every list $x s$ which is not "total". We say that an element $a$ of a domain is total if it is maximal, i.e if there is no $b$ with $a \sqsubset b$, and is finite (in the domain-theoretic sense). In particular, if $z s$ is a list which is total then it must be of the form $\left[z_{1}, \ldots, z_{n}\right]$ for some $n \geq 0$, where each $z_{i}$ is total.

In the case of a list of integers, to say that it is total means that it is finite and does not contain $\perp$ as a member. However, for lists of more complex types, the two definitions are not equivalent. Consequently, for example, if $h$ is a function defined on lists of lists of integers and is hyper-strict then we must have $h([[8],[2, \perp, 12]])=\perp$, although the list does not contain $\perp$ as one of its members.

To detect such properties, Wadler defined an abstract interpretation. One way of looking at the abstract domain used by Wadler in the analysis of lists of elements of some type $\tau$ is as a domain obtained by double-lifting the abstract domain used in the analysis of expressions of type $\tau$. For example, if $\tau=$ int then his abstract domain, $\left\{\perp, \infty, \perp_{\epsilon}, T_{\epsilon}\right\}$, may be seen to be the same as $\left(2_{\perp}\right)_{\perp}$. Recall that the abstract function cons ${ }^{\mathcal{S}}$ of the operation cons was defined as follows. For any $x, y \in \mathbf{2}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{cons}^{s} x \perp & =\infty \\
\operatorname{cons}^{\mathcal{s}} x \infty & =\infty \\
\operatorname{cons}^{s} x y_{\epsilon} & =(x \sqcap y)_{\epsilon}
\end{aligned}
$$

It is necessary to add that $n i l^{\mathcal{S}}=\mathrm{T}_{\epsilon}$. In general for any finite lattice $A$, we can define cons ${ }_{A}^{\mathcal{S}}: A \times\left(A_{\perp}\right)_{\perp} \rightarrow\left(A_{\perp}\right)_{\perp}$ in this way.

Recall that our ultimate aim, as in Chapter 6, is to somehow relate the abstract interpretation of different instances of polymorphic functions. Unfortunately, with this choice of abstract domains and definition of $\operatorname{cons} s_{A}^{\mathcal{S}}$, we are unable to prove that the desired relationship holds. We overcome this difficulty by using the abstract domains used by Nielson and Nielson [38]. In explaining it in the next section, we will mainly concentrate on the monomorphic case.

### 7.3 Abstract Interpretation

### 7.3.1 Nielson and Nielson's Approach

If $A$ is the abstract domain corresponding to the type $\tau$, Nielson and Nielson use certain subsets of $A$ as elements of the abstract domain for the type of lists whose members are of type $\tau$ [38]. We need to give a number of definitions before introducing these subsets. Except for some difference in notation, these definitions are to be found in [38].

Let $A$ be a finite lattice. Recall that any subset $X \subseteq A$ is said to be open if $X$ is upwards closed; that is, $X$ is open in the Scott topology induced by the lattice structure on $A$. Let $\mathcal{O}(A)$ denote the set of all non-empty open subsets of $A$, that is

$$
\mathcal{O}(A)=\left\{X^{\dagger} \mid X \subseteq A \text { and } X \neq \emptyset\right\}
$$

where $X^{\dagger}$ is the upward closure of $X$.
The relation $\supseteq$ makes $\mathcal{O}(A)$ a lattice in which $A$ is the smallest element and $\{T\}$ is the greatest element, where T is the greatest element of $A$. The lattice operations $\Pi$ and $\sqcup$ are respectively given by the set-theoretic operations $U$ and $\cap$.

We now come to the set of points used in the abstract interpretation of lists whose members use $A$ in their abstract interpretation. Define $L(A)$ by

$$
L(A)=\{\perp, \infty\} \cup\left\{X_{\in} \mid X \in \mathcal{O}(A)\right\}
$$

Another way of looking at this set is as $\left(\mathcal{O}(A)_{\perp}\right)_{\perp}$. To make this a lattice, first an ordering $\sqsubseteq$ is defined on $L(A)$. To do this let $Z, X_{\epsilon}$ and $Y_{\epsilon}$ be any elements of this set. Then the ordering is given by

$$
\begin{array}{rll}
\perp & \sqsubseteq Z & \\
\infty & \sqsubseteq Z & \text { if } Z \neq \perp \\
X_{\epsilon} & \sqsubseteq Y_{\epsilon} & \text { if } X \sqsubseteq Y \text { in } \mathcal{O}(A)
\end{array}
$$

The last statement is equivalent to saying that $X \supseteq Y$.
It is now necessary to provide an interpretation to the elements of $L(A)$. That is,


Figure 7.1: The Lattice $L(A)$
what does it mean for a list $x s$ to have the property represented by an element of $L(A)$ ?

- $\perp$ describes the list $\perp$.
- $\infty$ describes all infinite lists, all partial lists and $\perp$.
- If $X=\left\{a_{1}, a_{2}, \ldots, a_{k}\right\}$ is an open set, then $X_{\epsilon}$ describes all lists described by $\perp$ and also those described by $\infty$, and all non-empty finite lists $\left[x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}\right]$ in which each $a_{i}$ describes some $x_{j}$. (NB : two distinct $a_{i}$ may describe some $x_{j}$.)
- $\{T\}_{\in}$ describes all lists. (the empty list is described only by this point.)

Later we will express this more clearly by defining the mapping abs which relates the standard semantics with the abstract semantics.

### 7.3.2 Comparison of $L(A)$ with Wadler's Domains

Since 2 is used in the abstract interpretation of integers, $L(\mathbf{2})$ is used in that of lists of integers. Now, $\{1\}_{\in}$ describes all lists, whereas $\{0,1\}_{\in}$ describes all except finite lists which do not have $\perp$ as a member. Therefore, in this example Wadler's domain
and $L(2)$ may be regarded as the same by identifying $\top_{\epsilon}$ with $\{1\}_{\epsilon}$ and $\perp_{\epsilon}$ with $\{0,1\}_{\epsilon}$.

One of the differences between the points of Wadler's abstract domains and those which we just described is easily observed when lists of pairs of integers are considered. Now, if $(0,0)_{\in}$ describes the finite list $\left[x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}\right]$, it is not necessarily the case that there is some $x_{j}$ described by $(0,0)$. For example, the list $[(4, \perp),(\perp, 5)]$ is described by $(0,0)_{\in}$ using Wadler's definition, but none of its members is described by $(0,0)$. Clearly, as was pointed out, this is not the case when the abstract domains which involve open sets are used. The point $\{(0,0)\}_{\in}^{\dagger}$ does not describe this list because the list does not have a member describable by $(0,0)$. The smallest point which describes this list is $\{(0,1),(1,0)\}_{\epsilon}^{\dagger}$. Notice also that in this example Wadler's domain has six elements whereas the one used by Nielson and Nielson has seven.

In general, whenever $A$ is a chain, $L(A)$ is also a chain with two more elements. Therefore, for the many examples considered by Wadler in [52], the lattices whose definitions were just outlined are the same (up to isomorphism) as Wadler's. But whenever the operator $\times$ is involved, two different abstract domains are obtained.

### 7.3.3 Some Operations on Lists

The abstract interpretation of some operations on lists will be defined. For any finite lattice $A$, define cons $s_{A}^{\mathcal{S}}: A \rightarrow L(A) \rightarrow L(A)$ by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{S}} x \perp & =\infty \\
\operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{S}} x \infty & =\infty \\
\operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{S}} x X_{\epsilon} & =\left(\{x\}^{\dagger} \sqcap X\right)_{\epsilon}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\Pi$ is the set union $\cup$. Also, let nil $\mathcal{S}_{A}^{S}=\left\{T_{A}\right\}_{\in}$; recall that this is the greatest element of $L(A)$. It is easy to show that $\operatorname{con} s_{A}^{\mathcal{S}}$ is continuous.

In this section, recall that only monomorphic functions are considered. Suppose $A$ and $B$ are finite lattices and $b$ in $B$, and also that $f: A \times L(A) \rightarrow B$ is a continuous function. Define case ${ }^{\mathcal{S}}$, the abstract interpretation of case, by

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}(b, f, \perp)=\perp \\
& \operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}(b, f, \infty)=f(\top, \infty) \\
& \operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(b, f,\{\top\}_{\epsilon}\right)=b \sqcup f\left(\top,\{\top\}_{\in}\right) \\
& \operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(b, f, Y_{\epsilon}\right)=\sqcup_{Y^{\prime} \in \mathcal{U}_{Y}} f\left(\sqcap Y^{\prime},\left(Y \ominus Y^{\prime}\right)_{\in}\right), \quad \text { if } Y \neq\{\top\}
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\mathcal{U}_{Y}=\left\{Y^{\prime} \mid Y^{\prime} \subseteq Y, Y^{\prime}\right.$ open and non-empty $\}$, and for any set $X$, $Y \ominus X=\left(Y-X^{\uparrow}\right)^{\uparrow} \cup\{\top\}$. In the fourth case of the definition, it is assumed that $Y \neq\{T\}$ because it has been treated in the third case.

As described in [38], the motivation to the last equation in the definition of case ${ }^{\mathcal{S}}$ is as follows. If $Y_{\epsilon}(Y \neq\{\top\})$ describes the list $x s$ then we may assume that the list is of the form cons $x x s^{\prime}$. Now, if the open set $Y^{\prime} \subseteq Y$ consists of the points which describe $x$ then $\Pi Y^{\prime}$ also describes $x$. This is because, if $a b s(x) \sqsubseteq y$ for every $y \in Y^{\prime}$ then $a b s(x) \sqsubseteq \sqcap Y^{\prime}$. We may assume that $Y^{\prime}$ is non-empty because $T$ describes $x$. If $y \in Y-Y^{\prime}$ then by definition of $Y^{\prime}, y$ does not describe $x$. But $Y_{\epsilon}$ describes cons $x x s^{\prime}$, and hence $y$ must describe some member of $x s^{\prime}$. Therefore, $\left(Y \ominus Y^{\prime}\right)_{\epsilon}$ describes $x s^{\prime}$; more details are given in [38].

To show that case ${ }^{\mathcal{S}}$ is continuous we consider the last case only; the other cases are very easy to check. Suppose $X_{\epsilon} \sqsubseteq Y_{\epsilon}$. It is necessary to show that

$$
\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(b, f, X_{\epsilon}\right) \sqsubseteq \operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(b, f, Y_{\epsilon}\right)
$$

By assumption $Y \subseteq X$. Let $U$ be any non-empty open subset of $X$. Then

$$
(Y-U) \subseteq(X-U)
$$

Consider the non-empty open subset $V_{U}$ of $Y$, which is defined by $V_{U}=Y \cap U$; it is non-empty because both $Y$ and $U$ contain at least $T$. Observe that

$$
(X-U) \supseteq(Y-U)=\left(Y-V_{U}\right)
$$

Hence,

$$
(X \ominus U)_{\epsilon} \sqsubseteq\left(Y \ominus V_{U}\right)_{\epsilon}
$$

Also,

$$
\sqcap U \sqsubseteq \sqcap V_{U}
$$

Thus,

$$
f\left(\sqcap U,(X \ominus U)_{\epsilon}\right) \sqsubseteq f\left(\sqcap V_{U},\left(Y \ominus V_{U}\right)_{\epsilon}\right)
$$

What is shown is that for any expression in the set whose least upper bound gives the left hand side of the inequality which we want to prove, there is an expression
in the corresponding set for the right hand side which dominates it. Now, it is easy to observe that

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(b, f, X_{\epsilon}\right) & =\bigsqcup_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{X}} f\left(\sqcap U,(X \ominus U)_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq \bigsqcup_{U \in \mathcal{U}_{X}} f\left(\sqcap V_{U},\left(Y \ominus V_{U}\right)_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq \bigsqcup_{V \in \mathcal{U}_{Y}} f\left(\sqcap V,(Y \ominus V)_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(b, f, Y_{\epsilon}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, case ${ }^{\mathcal{S}}$ is continuous.

### 7.3.4 Strictness Analysis and Safety

Among the information that can be obtained from the analysis described above, we concentrate on tail-strictness and hyper-strictness. Consider the function $g$ which was defined earlier in terms of a, f and case. Let $A$ and $B$ be the finite abstract domains which correspond to the semantic domains $D$ and $E$ respectively. Now, $g^{\mathcal{S}}: L(A) \rightarrow B$ is given by

$$
g^{\mathcal{S}}(Z)=\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(a^{\mathcal{S}}, f^{\mathcal{S}}, Z\right)
$$

and this function is continuous because case ${ }^{\mathcal{S}}$ is. On the other hand, if $\operatorname{List}(D)$ is the domain of all lists whose members are elements of $D$, then $g: \operatorname{List}(D) \rightarrow E$, the semantics of $g$, is defined by

$$
g(y s)=\operatorname{case}(a, f, y s)
$$

where $a$ and $f$ are the respective semantics of a and $f$. The properties of interest are

- If $g^{\mathcal{S}}(\infty)=\perp$ then $g$ is tail-strict.
- If $g^{\mathcal{S}}\left(X_{\epsilon}\right)=\perp$ for all $X \neq\{T\}$, then $g$ is hyper-strict.

At this point, it is necessary to prove that these statements are correct. In order to give a BHA-style proof, we extend the definition of $a b s$. The new case here is that of lists, otherwise the definition of $a b s$ is as given in [11] (see also Chapter 1). If $D$
is a semantic domain whose corresponding abstract domain is $A$, in the notation of the previous chapter $A b s=A$, then the abstract mapping $a b s: \operatorname{List}(D) \rightarrow L(A)$ is given by

$$
a b s(x s)= \begin{cases}\perp & \text { if } x s=\perp \\ \{\top\}_{\epsilon} & \text { if } x s=[] \\ \infty & \text { if } x s \text { is infinite or a partial list } \\ \left\{a b s\left(x_{i}\right) \mid 1 \leq i \leq n\right\}_{\epsilon}^{\dagger} & \text { if } x s=\left[x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right]\end{cases}
$$

The $a b s$ in the right hand side in the fourth case of this definition is the one that relates $D$ and $A$. Strictly speaking $a b s$ should be indexed by the type which is interpreted by its argument domain. Now, it is easy to see that $a b s$ is continuous.

With this extension of the definition of $a b s$, the following two properties still hold.

$$
\begin{aligned}
a b s(h(x)) & \sqsubseteq a b s(h)(a b s(x)) \\
a b s(x)=\perp & \Rightarrow x=\perp
\end{aligned}
$$

Moreover,

$$
a b s(x s) \neq\{T\}_{\in} \text { if and only if } x s \text { is not total. }
$$

Since essentially open sets are being used as elements of abstract domains, the significant adjustment which has to be made in the definition of $a b s$ is seen in the fourth case of the definition above. Recall that Wadler's original definition is given by

$$
a b s\left(\left[x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right]\right)=\left(\sqcap\left\{a b s\left(x_{1}\right), \ldots, a b s\left(x_{n}\right)\right\}\right)_{\epsilon}
$$

We need the following statement to prove the correctness of the abstract interpretation.

Proposition 7.3.1 abs $($ case $) \sqsubseteq c a s e^{\mathcal{S}}$

## Proof

It is not difficult to see that it is sufficient to show that for any $b, g$, and $Z$, if $a b s(a) \sqsubseteq b, a b s(f) \sqsubseteq g$, and $a b s(x s) \sqsubseteq Z$ then

$$
\operatorname{abs}(\operatorname{case}(a, f, x s)) \sqsubseteq \operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}(b, g, Z)
$$

We consider the different possible values of $Z$.
(i) $Z=\perp$

If $a b s(x s) \sqsubseteq Z$ then $x s=\perp$. Now,

$$
\begin{aligned}
a b s(\operatorname{case}(a, f, x s)) & =\operatorname{abs}(\operatorname{case}(a, f, \perp)) \\
& =a b s(\perp) \\
& =\perp
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{s}}(b, g, \perp)=\perp
$$

In this case, the two values are actually equal.
(ii) $Z=\infty$

If $a b s(x s) \sqsubseteq Z$ then either $x s=\perp$ or $x s$ is a partial or an infinite list. The first case is trivial, and hence we assume that $x s=$ cons $x x s^{\prime}$. Notice that since $a b s(x s) \sqsubseteq Z$, it is also the case that $a b s\left(x s^{\prime}\right) \sqsubseteq Z$. Now, by definition and by assumption on $g$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{abs}(c a s e(a, f, x s)) & =a b s\left(\operatorname{case}\left(a, f, \text { cons } x x s^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& =a b s\left(f\left(x, x s^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq a b s(f)\left(a b s(x), a b s\left(x s^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq g\left(a b s(x), a b s\left(x s^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq g(\top, \infty)
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{s}}(b, g, \infty)=g(\top, \infty)
$$

Therefore,

$$
a b s(\operatorname{case}(a, f, x s)) \sqsubseteq \operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{s}}(b, g, Z)
$$

(iii) $Z=Y_{\epsilon}$, where $Y=\left\{y_{1}, \ldots, y_{m}\right\}^{\uparrow}$

Assume that $Y \neq\{T\}$; we will consider the other possibility later. Suppose also that $a b s(x s) \sqsubseteq Y_{\epsilon}$. We may also assume that $x s$ is some finite list $\left[x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right]$; the remaining possibilities have already been dealt with in the previous cases. Now,

$$
a b s(x s)=\left\{a b s\left(x_{1}\right), \ldots, a b s\left(x_{n}\right)\right\}_{\epsilon}^{\uparrow}
$$

Moreover,

$$
Y \subseteq\left\{a b s\left(x_{1}\right), \ldots, a b s\left(x_{n}\right)\right\}^{\uparrow}
$$

and hence for any open subset $Y^{\prime}$ of $Y$

$$
\left(Y \ominus Y^{\prime}\right)_{\epsilon} \sqsupseteq\left((a b s(x s)) \ominus Y^{\prime}\right)_{\epsilon}
$$

There are two cases to consider. The first is when $n=1$. In this case $Y \subseteq$ $\left\{a b s\left(x_{1}\right)\right\}^{\uparrow}$, and hence for every $y_{i} \in Y$ we have $a b s\left(x_{1}\right) \sqsubseteq y_{i}$. Thus, for any subset $Y^{\prime}$ of $Y, a b s\left(x_{1}\right) \sqsubseteq \sqcap Y^{\prime}$. Therefore, if $Y^{\prime}=Y$ then $\left(Y \ominus Y^{\prime}\right)_{\epsilon}=\{T\}_{\epsilon}$ and hence

$$
g\left(a b s\left(x_{1}\right),\{\top\}_{\epsilon}\right) \sqsubseteq g\left(\sqcap Y^{\prime},\left(Y \ominus Y^{\prime}\right)_{\epsilon}\right)
$$

Now, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{abs}(\operatorname{case}(a, f, x s)) & =\operatorname{abs}\left(f\left(x_{1},[]\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq g\left(a b s\left(x_{1}\right), a b s([])\right) \\
& =g\left(a b s\left(x_{1}\right),\{\top\}_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq g\left(\sqcap Y^{\prime},\left(Y \ominus Y^{\prime}\right)_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq \bigsqcup_{X \in \mathcal{U}_{Y}} g\left(\sqcap X,(Y \ominus X)_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(b, g, Y_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}(b, g, Z)
\end{aligned}
$$

Suppose $n \neq 1$. Let $x s^{\prime}=\left[x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}\right]$ and $Y^{\prime}=Y \cap\left\{a b s\left(x_{1}\right)\right\}^{\uparrow}$. In this case, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
Y-Y^{\prime} & =Y-\left(Y \cap\left\{a b s\left(x_{1}\right)\right\}^{\uparrow}\right) \\
& =Y-\left\{a b s\left(x_{1}\right)\right\}^{\uparrow} \\
& \subseteq\left\{a b s\left(x_{1}\right), \ldots, a b s\left(x_{n}\right)\right\}^{\uparrow}-\left\{a b s\left(x_{1}\right)\right\}^{\uparrow} \\
& \subseteq\left\{a b s\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, a b s\left(x_{n}\right)\right\}^{\uparrow}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{aligned}
a b s\left(x s^{\prime}\right) & =\left\{a b s\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, a b s\left(x_{n}\right)\right\}_{\epsilon}^{\uparrow} \\
& \sqsubseteq\left(Y \ominus Y^{\prime}\right)_{\epsilon}
\end{aligned}
$$

Moreover, $a b s\left(x_{1}\right) \sqsubseteq \sqcap Y^{\prime}$ and hence

$$
g\left(a b s\left(x_{1}\right), a b s\left(x s^{\prime}\right)\right) \sqsubseteq g\left(\sqcap Y^{\prime},\left(Y \ominus Y^{\prime}\right)_{\epsilon}\right)
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\begin{aligned}
a b s(c a s e(a, f, x s)) & =a b s\left(f\left(x_{1}, x s^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq a b s(f)\left(a b s\left(x_{1}\right), a b s\left(x s^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq g\left(a b s\left(x_{1}\right), a b s\left(x s^{\prime}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Combining the above results, we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{abs}(\operatorname{case}(a, f, x s)) & \sqsubseteq g\left(\sqcap Y^{\prime},\left(Y \ominus Y^{\prime}\right)_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq \operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(b, g, Y_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}(b, g, Z)
\end{aligned}
$$

(iv) $Z=\{T\}_{\epsilon}$

By definition, for this $Z$

$$
\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}(b, g, Z)=b \sqcup g(\top, Z)
$$

If $x s=[]$ then $\operatorname{case}(a, f, x s)=a$, and since by assumption $a b s(a) \sqsubseteq b$, it follows that

$$
\begin{aligned}
a b s(\operatorname{case}(a, f, x s)) & =a b s(a) \\
& \sqsubseteq b \\
& \sqsubseteq b \sqcup g\left(\top,\{\top\}_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{s}}(b, g, Z)
\end{aligned}
$$

If $x s$ is a non-empty list we may assume that it is of the form cons $x x s^{\prime}$. Now,

$$
a b s(\operatorname{case}(a, f, x s))=\operatorname{abs}\left(\operatorname{case}\left(a, f, \text { cons } x x s^{\prime}\right)\right)
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =a b s\left(f\left(x, x s^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq a b s(f)\left(a b s(x), a b s\left(x s^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq g\left(a b s(x), a b s\left(x s^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq g\left(\top,\{\top\}_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq b \sqcup g\left(\top,\{\top\}_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& =\operatorname{case}^{\mathcal{S}}(b, g, Z)
\end{aligned}
$$

From this it is easy to see that for the function $g$ defined earlier, we have

$$
a b s(g) \sqsubseteq g^{\mathcal{s}}
$$

Moreover, we can now prove the following proposition.

Proposition 7.3.2 (i) If $g^{\mathcal{S}}(\infty)=\perp$ then $g$ is tail-strict, and
(ii) If $g^{\mathcal{S}}\left(X_{\epsilon}\right)=\perp$ for all $X \neq\{\top\}$, then $g$ is hyper-strict.

## Proof

(i) Suppose $g^{\mathcal{S}}(\infty)=\perp$. Let $y s$ be any infinite or partial list. We want to show that $g(y s)=\perp$. By the previous proposition,

$$
\begin{aligned}
a b s(g(y s)) & \sqsubseteq a b s(g)(a b s(y s)) \\
& \sqsubseteq g^{s}(\infty) \\
& =\perp
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $a b s$ is is $\perp$-reflecting, we have

$$
g(y s)=\perp
$$

and hence $g$ is tail-strict.
(ii) Suppose $g^{\mathcal{S}}\left(X_{\epsilon}\right)=\perp$ for all $X \neq\{T\}$. To prove that $g$ is hyper-strict, let $y s$ be any finite list which is not total. Again,

$$
\begin{aligned}
a b s(g(y s)) & \sqsubseteq a b s(g)(a b s(y s)) \\
& \sqsubseteq g^{\mathcal{s}}\left(X_{\epsilon}\right), \text { for some } X \neq\{\top\} \\
& =\perp
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $a b s$ is is $\perp$-reflecting, we have

$$
g(y s)=\perp
$$

Therefore, $g$ is hyper-strict.

### 7.3.5 An Example

In a previous subsection, to highlight the difference between the abstract domains used in the original approach, which is Wadler's, and its generalisation by the Nielson and Nielson, a domain of lists of pairs was considered. Here, an example of a function which is defined on lists of pairs of integers is given.

Consider

```
g nil = 0
g (cons x xs) = if c then (fst x) + (g xs)
    else (snd x) + (g xs)
```

Suppose that $c^{\mathcal{S}}=1$.
(i) It is not difficult to see that Wadler's analysis of $g$ yields the function $g^{\mathcal{S}}$ : $\left((\mathbf{2} \times \mathbf{2})_{\perp}\right)_{\perp} \rightarrow \mathbf{2}$, which is given by

$$
g^{\mathcal{S}}(z)= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } z=\perp \text { or } z=\infty \\ 1 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Note that $g^{\mathcal{S}}\left((0,0)_{\epsilon}\right)=1$.
(ii) Using the approach of Nielson and Nielson, $g^{s}:(L(\mathbf{2}) \times L(\mathbf{2})) \rightarrow \mathbf{2}$, is given by

$$
g^{s}(z)= \begin{cases}0 & \text { if } z=\perp \text { or } z=\infty \text { or } z=\{(0,0)\}_{\epsilon}^{\uparrow} \\ 1 & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Thus, $g^{\mathcal{S}}\left(\{(0,0)\}_{\epsilon}^{\dagger}\right)=0$.

The first method is more efficient because the domain of the abstract function is normally smaller. As was mentioned earlier, the reason behind our choice of the latter is due to its suitability in dealing with polymorphic functions.

### 7.4 Polymorphic Functions

We now consider polymorphic functions. It will be shown that the collection of the abstract interpretations of instances of any polymorphic function form a lax natural transformation.

Of particular interest is the function case which will now be regarded as polymorphic. In the next sections, we will show that $c a s e^{\mathcal{S}}$ is a lax natural transformation. To do this, we need some definitions.

### 7.4.1 $L$ as a functor on $\mathcal{A}^{e c}$

We extend the definition of $L$ so that it becomes a functor on the category of finite lattices and embedding-closure pairs. Its action on objects is already defined. Now, for any embedding-closure pair $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ we need to define $L(h): L(A) \rightarrow^{e c} L(B)$. To do this let $L^{e}(h): A \rightarrow B$ and $L^{c}(h): B \rightarrow A$ be given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
L^{e}(h)(\perp) & =\perp \\
L^{e}(h)(\infty) & =\infty \\
L^{c}(h)(\perp) & =\perp \\
L^{c}(h)(\infty) & =\infty
\end{aligned}
$$

To complete the definitions we introduce the following notation.
Notation. For any function $f$ and any subset $C$ of the domain of $f, f(C)$ is used to denote the image of $C$ under $f$, that is, $f(C)=\{f(x) \mid x \in C\}$. Since we use upper-case to represent sets and lower-case to represent points, no confusion should arise as to which application is being referred to a time.

For any $X_{\epsilon} \in L(A)$ and $Y_{\epsilon} \in L(B)$, we define

$$
\begin{aligned}
L^{e}(h)\left(X_{\epsilon}\right) & =\left(h^{e}(X)^{\uparrow}\right)_{\epsilon}, \quad \text { and } \\
L^{c}(h)\left(Y_{\epsilon}\right) & =\left(h^{c}(Y)\right)_{\epsilon}
\end{aligned}
$$

$L^{e}(h)\left(X_{\epsilon}\right)$ is essentially the upwards closure of the image of $X$ under $h^{e}$, except that it is an element of $L(A)$ and not $\mathcal{O}(A)$. It can be shown that $h^{c}(Y)$ is the inverse
image of $Y$ under $h^{e}$, that is $h^{c}(Y)=h^{e^{-1}}(Y)$. This is because,

$$
\begin{aligned}
x \in h^{c}(Y) & \Rightarrow x=h^{c}(y) \quad \text { for some } y \in Y \\
& \Rightarrow h^{e}(x) \sqsupseteq y \\
& \Rightarrow h^{e}(x) \in Y \quad \text { since } Y \text { is open } \\
& \Rightarrow x \in h^{e^{-1}}(Y)
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\begin{aligned}
x \in h^{e^{-1}}(Y) & \Rightarrow h^{e}(x) \in Y \\
& \Rightarrow h^{c}\left(h^{e}(x)\right) \in h^{c}(Y) \\
& \Rightarrow x \in h^{c}(Y)
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, $h^{c}(Y)$ is always open because the inverse image of an open set under a continuous function is always open. It appears that there is a lack of symmetry in the above definitions, in the sense that we do not have the operator ${ }^{\dagger}$ in the second case. This is because, unlike $h^{e}, h^{c}$ is an open map, that is, it maps open sets to open sets, and hence for open sets $Y, h^{c}(Y)^{\dagger}=h^{c}(Y)$.

It is easy to check that both $L^{e}(h)$ and $L^{c}(h)$ are continuous. Next, it will be shown that $L(h)$, that is ( $L^{e}(h), L^{c}(h)$ ), is an embedding-closure pair. To do this we need the following proposition.

Proposition 7.4.1 For any non-empty open sets $X \subseteq A$ and $Y \subseteq B$,
(i) $h^{e}\left(h^{c}(Y)\right)^{\uparrow} \subseteq Y \quad$ and $\quad$ (ii) $h^{c}\left(h^{e}(X)^{\dagger}\right)=X$

## Proof

(i) Let $y \in h^{e}\left(h^{c}(Y)\right)^{\uparrow}$. This means that there is some $y_{1} \in h^{e}\left(h^{c}(Y)\right)$ such that $y_{1} \sqsubseteq y$. Now, $y_{1}=h^{e}(x)$ for some $x \in h^{c}(Y)$. Also, there is some $y_{2} \in Y$ such that $x=h^{c}\left(y_{2}\right)$. Therefore ,

$$
y \sqsupseteq y_{1}=h^{e}(x)=h^{e}\left(h^{c}\left(y_{2}\right)\right) \sqsupseteq y_{2} \in Y
$$

Since $y_{2} \in Y$ and $Y$ is open, we have $y \in Y$. Therefore,

$$
h^{e}\left(h^{c}(Y)\right)^{\uparrow} \subseteq Y
$$

(ii) Let $x \in h^{c}\left(h^{e}(X)^{\uparrow}\right)$. Now, $x=h^{c}\left(y_{1}\right)$ for some $y_{1} \in h^{e}(X)^{\uparrow}$. This implies that $y_{1} \sqsupseteq y_{2} \in h^{e}(X)$ for some $y_{2}$. Again $y_{2}=h^{e}\left(x_{2}\right)$ for some $x_{2} \in X$. Thus,

$$
x=h^{c}\left(y_{1}\right) \sqsupseteq h^{c}\left(y_{2}\right)=h^{c}\left(h^{e}\left(x_{2}\right)\right)=x_{2}
$$

Since $x_{2} \in X$ and $X$ is open, $x \in X$. Therefore

$$
h^{c}\left(h^{e}(X)^{\uparrow}\right) \subseteq X
$$

Since $h^{c} \circ h^{e}=i d$, it follows that

$$
X=h^{c}\left(h^{e}(X)\right)
$$

Clearly,

$$
h^{c}\left(h^{e}(X)\right) \subseteq h^{c}\left(h^{e}(X)^{\uparrow}\right)
$$

Hence,

$$
X \subseteq h^{c}\left(h^{e}(X)^{\uparrow}\right)
$$

Therefore,

$$
h^{c}\left(h^{e}(X)^{\uparrow}\right)=X
$$

This completes the proof of the Proposition.
Going back to the definition of the mapping $L$, we have

$$
\left(L^{e}(h) \circ L^{c}(h)\right)(\perp)=\perp \text { and }\left(L^{e}(h) \circ L^{c}(h)\right)(\infty)=\infty
$$

Moreover,

$$
\left(L^{c}(h) \circ L^{e}(h)\right)(\perp)=\perp \text { and }\left(L^{c}(h) \circ L^{e}(h)\right)(\infty)=\infty
$$

Also,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(L^{e}(h) \circ L^{c}(h)\right)\left(Y_{\epsilon}\right) & =L^{e}(h)\left(h^{c}(Y)_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& =h^{e}\left(h^{c}(Y)\right)_{\epsilon}^{\dagger} \\
& \sqsupseteq Y_{\epsilon}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(L^{c}(h) \circ L^{e}(h)\right)\left(X_{\epsilon}\right) & =L^{c}(h)\left(h^{e}(X)_{\epsilon}^{\dagger}\right) \\
& =h^{c}\left(h^{e}(X)\right)_{\epsilon}^{\dagger} \\
& =X_{\epsilon}
\end{aligned}
$$

It is now easy to see that $L(h)$ is indeed an embedding-closure pair.
It also easy to check that

$$
\begin{array}{rlc}
L(i d) & =i d \quad \text { and } \\
L\left(h_{2} \circ h_{1}\right) & =L\left(h_{2}\right) \circ L\left(h_{1}\right)
\end{array}
$$

Therefore, $L$ is a functor from $\mathcal{A}^{e c}$ to $\mathcal{A}^{e c}$.

## Some Properties of $L(h)$

The embedding-closure pairs from the two-point lattice 2 to any finite lattice are of special interest; this was seen in the previous chapter. We consider such pairs and see what their images under $L$ are. For every non-top element $a$ of the finite lattice $A$, consider the embedding-closure pair $h_{a}: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow{ }^{e c} A$, whose definitions is given in Chapter 3. Suppose $X$ and $Y$ are non-empty open subsets of 2 and $A$ respectively. Then, it is not difficult to show that

$$
h_{a}^{e}(X)^{\dagger}= \begin{cases}\{a\}^{\dagger} & \text { if } 0 \in X \\ \left\{\top_{A}\right\} & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Also,

$$
h_{a}^{c}(Y)= \begin{cases}\{0,1\} & \text { if } a \in Y \\ \{1\} & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Thus,

$$
L^{e}\left(h_{a}\right)\left(X_{\epsilon}\right)= \begin{cases}\{a\}_{\epsilon}^{\dagger} & \text { if } 0 \in X \\ \left\{\top_{A}\right\}_{\in} & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
L^{c}\left(h_{a}\right)\left(Y_{\epsilon}\right)= \begin{cases}\{0,1\}_{\epsilon} & \text { if } a \in Y \\ \{1\}_{\epsilon} & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

In the first and third equations above, the condition $0 \in X$ is equivalent to $X=$ $\{0,1\}$ because $X$ is an open subset of 2.

In previous chapters, we have already seen how type constructors can be interpreted as functors. In the case of lists, the mapping List can be extended to be a functor from $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$ to $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$. With regard to abstract interpretation, what is different about the list type constructor, is that the functors List and $L$ are not similar. In the case of the function type constructor $\rightarrow$, for example, the functors interpreting it both in the standard semantics and the abstract semantics are defined in the same way. Actually, the second can be seen as the restriction of the first, because it is only defined on finite lattices and embedding-closure pairs between them.

### 7.4.2 Some Lax Natural Transformations

It is easy to show that the collection of mappings cons $s_{A}^{\mathcal{S}}: A \times L(A) \rightarrow L(A)$ is a lax natural transformation; in fact it is a natural transformation. We omit the proof; it follows from the definition very easily. We give only the proof of the fact that $\left\{c a s e_{A, B}^{\mathcal{S}}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation from $F$ to $G$, where

$$
F(A, B)=B \times(A \times L(A) \rightarrow B) \times L(A) \text { and } G(A, B)=B
$$

Suppose $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} C$ and $k: B \rightarrow{ }^{e c} D$. From the type information, we have

$$
F^{e}(h, k)=k^{e} \times\left(\lambda v . k^{e} \circ v \circ h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right) \times L^{e}(h) \text { and } G^{e}(h, k)=k^{e} .
$$

The following lemma will be used in the proof of the proposition following it.

Lemma 7.4.1 Let $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ be an embedding-closure pair, and let $X$ and $Y$ be non-empty open subsets of $B$ such that $X \subseteq Y$. Then

$$
h^{c}(Y) \ominus h^{c}(X) \subseteq h^{c}(Y \ominus X)
$$

## Proof

To show this let $a \in h^{c}(Y) \ominus h^{c}(X)$. If $a=\mathrm{T}_{A}$ then since $h^{c}(Y \ominus X)$ is a non-empty open set, $a$ must be one of its elements. If $a \neq \mathrm{T}_{A}$ then $a \in h^{c}(Y)$ and $a \notin h^{c}(X)$. Thus, $a=h^{c}(y)$ for some $y \in Y$. Clearly $y \notin X$, and therefore $y \in(Y-X)$ which implies that $y \in Y \ominus X$ and hence $a \in h^{c}(Y \ominus X)$. Thus, we have

$$
h^{c}(Y) \ominus h^{c}(X) \subseteq h^{c}(Y \ominus X)
$$

A consequence of this lemma is that

$$
L^{c}(h)\left((Y \ominus X)_{\epsilon}\right) \sqsubseteq\left(h^{c}(Y) \ominus h^{c}(X)\right)_{\epsilon}
$$

Proposition 7.4.2 case $^{\mathcal{S}}$ is a lax natural transformation from $F$ to $G$. That is, if $A, B, C$ and $D$ are finite lattices, $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} C$ and $k: B \rightarrow{ }^{e c} D$ are embedding-closure pairs, then we have

$$
\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{e}(h, k) \sqsubseteq G^{e}(h, k) \circ \operatorname{cas} e_{A, B}^{\mathcal{S}}
$$

## Proof

Let $a_{B}$ be any element of $B$, and $f: C \times L(C) \rightarrow D$ be any continuous function.

We want to show that for any $Z \in L(A)$, we have

$$
\left(\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{e}(h, k)\right)\left(a_{B}, f, Z\right) \sqsubseteq\left(G^{e}(h, k) \circ c a s e_{A, B}^{\mathcal{S}}\right)\left(a_{B}, f, Z\right)
$$

Now, there are four cases to consider.
(i) $Z=\perp_{L(A)}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{e}(h, k)\right)\left(a_{B}, f, \perp_{L(A)}\right) \\
& \quad=\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(k^{e}\left(a_{B}\right), k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right), L^{e}(h)\left(\perp_{L(A)}\right)\right) \\
& \quad=\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(k^{e}\left(a_{B}\right), k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right), \perp_{L(C)}\right) \\
& \quad=\perp_{D}
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\left(G^{e}(h, k) \circ c a s e_{A, B}^{\mathcal{S}}\right)\left(a_{B}, f, \perp_{L(A)}\right)=k^{e}\left(\perp_{B}\right)
$$

Since $\perp_{D} \sqsubseteq k^{e}\left(\perp_{B}\right)$, the inequality holds.
(ii) $Z=\infty$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{e}(h, k)\right)\left(a_{B}, f, \infty\right) \\
& \quad=\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{S}\left(k^{e}\left(a_{B}\right), k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right), L^{e}(h)(\infty)\right) \\
& \quad=\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{S}\left(k^{e}\left(a_{B}\right), k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right), \infty\right) \\
& \quad=\left(k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right)\right)\left(T_{C}, \infty\right) \\
& \quad=k^{e}\left(f\left(h^{c}\left(T_{C}\right), L^{c}(h)(\infty)\right)\right) \\
& \quad=k^{e}\left(f\left(\mathrm{~T}_{A}, \infty\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Also,

$$
\left(G^{e}(h, k) \circ c a s e_{A, B}^{\mathcal{S}}\right)\left(a_{B}, f, \infty\right)=k^{e}\left(f\left(\top_{A}, \infty\right)\right)
$$

Again, the inequality holds.
(iii) $Z=\left\{T_{A}\right\}_{\epsilon}$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{e}(h, k)\right)\left(a_{B}, f,\left\{\top_{A}\right\}_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& \quad=\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(k^{e}\left(a_{B}\right), k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right), L^{e}(h)\left(\left\{\top_{A}\right\}_{\epsilon}\right)\right) \\
& \quad=\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(k^{e}\left(a_{B}\right), k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right),\left\{T_{C}\right\}_{\epsilon}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =k^{e}\left(a_{B}\right) \sqcup\left(k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right)\left(T_{C},\left\{T_{C}\right\}_{\epsilon}\right)\right) \\
& =k^{e}\left(a_{B}\right) \sqcup k^{e}\left(f\left(h^{c}\left(T_{C}\right), L^{c}(h)\left(\left\{T_{C}\right\}_{\epsilon}\right)\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq k^{e}\left(a_{B} \sqcup f\left(h^{c}\left(T_{C}\right), L^{c}(h)\left(\left\{T_{C}\right\}_{\in}\right)\right)\right) \\
& =k^{e}\left(a_{B} \sqcup f\left(T_{A},\left\{T_{A}\right\}_{\in}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\left(G^{e}(h, k) \circ c a s e_{A, B}^{\mathcal{S}}\right)\left(a_{B}, f,\left\{\top_{A}\right\}_{\epsilon}\right)=k^{e}\left(a_{B} \sqcup f\left(\top_{A},\left\{\top_{A}\right\}_{\epsilon}\right)\right)
$$

(iv) $Z=Y_{\epsilon}$

We may assume that $Y \neq\left\{T_{A}\right\}$, because we have treated the other case already. Let $W=h^{e}(Y)^{\uparrow}$.

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ F^{e}(h, k)\right)\left(a_{B}, f, Y_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& \quad=\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(k^{e}\left(a_{B}\right), k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right), L^{e}(h)\left(Y_{\epsilon}\right)\right) \\
& \quad=\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{S}}\left(k^{e}\left(a_{B}\right), k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right), h^{e}(Y)_{\epsilon}^{\uparrow}\right) \\
& \quad=\bigsqcup_{Z \in \mathcal{U}_{W}}\left(k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times L^{c}(h)\right)\right)\left(\sqcap Z,\left(h^{e}(Y)^{\uparrow} \ominus Z\right)_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& \quad=\bigsqcup_{Z \in \mathcal{U}_{W}} k^{e}\left(f\left(h^{c}(\sqcap Z), L^{c}(h)\left(\left(h^{e}(Y)^{\uparrow} \ominus Z\right)_{\epsilon}\right)\right)\right) \\
& \quad=\sqcup_{Z \in \mathcal{U}_{W}} k^{e}\left(f\left(h^{c}(\sqcap Z),\left(h^{c}\left(h^{e}(Y)^{\uparrow} \ominus Z\right)\right)_{\epsilon}\right)\right) \\
& \quad \subseteq \sqcup_{Z \in \mathcal{U}_{W}} k^{e}\left(f\left(\sqcap h^{c}(Z),\left(h^{c}\left(h^{e}(Y)^{\uparrow}\right) \ominus h^{c}(Z)\right)_{\epsilon}\right)\right) \\
& \quad=\sqcup_{Z \in \mathcal{U}_{W}} k^{e}\left(f\left(\sqcap h^{c}(Z),\left(Y \ominus h^{c}(Z)\right)_{\epsilon}\right)\right) \\
& \quad \sqsubseteq k^{e}\left(\sqcup_{Z \in \mathcal{U}_{W}} f\left(\sqcap h^{c}(Z),\left(Y \ominus h^{c}(Z)\right)_{\epsilon}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\left(G^{e}(h, k) \circ \operatorname{case}_{A, B}^{\mathcal{S}}\right)\left(a_{B}, f, Y_{\epsilon}\right)=k^{e}\left(\bigsqcup_{X \in \mathcal{U}_{Y}} f\left(\Pi X,(Y \ominus X)_{\epsilon}\right)\right)
$$

It is now sufficient to show that for any non-empty open subset $V$ of $h^{e}(Y)^{\dagger}$, i.e $V \in \mathcal{U}_{W}$, the following holds

$$
f\left(\sqcap h^{c}(V),\left(Y \ominus h^{c}(V)\right)_{\epsilon}\right) \sqsubseteq \bigsqcup_{X \in \mathcal{U}_{Y}} f\left(\sqcap X,(Y \ominus X)_{\epsilon}\right)
$$

Let $X^{\prime}=h^{c}(V)$. It is easy to check that $X^{\prime} \subseteq Y$, that is $X^{\prime} \in \mathcal{U}_{Y}$. Hence,

$$
\begin{aligned}
f\left(\sqcap h^{c}(V),\left(Y \ominus h^{c}(V)\right)_{\epsilon}\right) & =f\left(\sqcap X^{\prime},\left(Y \ominus X^{\prime}\right)_{\epsilon}\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq \bigsqcup_{X \in \mathcal{U}_{Y}} f\left(\sqcap X,(Y \ominus X)_{\epsilon}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, case ${ }^{\mathcal{S}}$ is a lax natural transformation.

Suppose f is a polymorphic function with type $\forall t . t \times[t] \rightarrow H(t)$, and g is the polymorphic function defined by $\mathrm{g}(\mathrm{xs})=$ case (a,f,xs) with type $\forall t .[t] \rightarrow H(t)$. For any finite lattices $A$ and $C$, and an embedding-closure pair $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} C$, assuming that

$$
f_{C}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ\left(h^{e} \times L^{e}(h)\right) \sqsubseteq H^{e}(h) \circ f_{A}^{\mathcal{S}}
$$

it is possible to show that

$$
g_{C}^{S} \circ L^{e}(h) \sqsubseteq H^{e}(h) \circ g_{A}^{S}
$$

(Strictly speaking, we should have $H^{\prime}$ instead of $H$ here.) To show this inequality, all we have to do is use the above proposition where we have $H(A)$ and $H(C)$ instead of $B$ and $D$, and $H(h)$ instead of $k$. Therefore,

$$
g_{C}^{S} \sqsubseteq \Pi H^{e}(h) \circ g_{A}^{S} \circ L^{c}(h)
$$

The greatest lower bound is taken over all possible $h$ 's. When $A$ is 2 , from the nature of the embedding-closure pairs defined on 2, which we studied in Chapter 3, we have

$$
g_{C}^{\mathcal{S}} \sqsubseteq \sqcap H^{e}\left(h_{u}\right) \circ g_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} \circ L^{c}\left(h_{u}\right)
$$

where $u$ ranges over all non-top elements of $C$. Here as well, we obtain the same approximation by using only the meet-irreducible elements of $C$. This, in many cases, reduces the number of functions involved when taking the greatest lower bound.

### 7.5 Implementation

We reported how to obtain an approximation to the abstract interpretation of any instance of a polymorphic higher-order function from that of the smallest in [6]. The type system of the language used in that work did not include lists. Seward's implementation of this method is for a lazy functional language called Core [48]. His implementation also extends to lists, although there is no known proof of correctness for this extension. It was our inability of proving the technique correct that lead
us to consider the method by Nielson and Nielson. However, many of the results in Seward's paper remain valid in this framework.

One of the examples given in [48] involves the function

```
foldr :: (a -> b -> b) -> b -> [a] -> b
    foldr f a nil =a
    foldr f a (cons x xs) = f x (foldr f a xs)
```

The abstract interpretation of the smallest instance of this function, that is foldr $r_{2,2}^{\mathcal{S}}$, would have 48 entries when tabulated. On the other hand, $f o l d r_{L(2), L(2)}^{\mathcal{S}}$ has a vast number of entries; in fact Hunt reports that they are of the order of $10^{6}$ [27]. Thus, if one computes the latter by the usual iterative means, checking for equality of functions at each iterative step will be very expensive.

Consider the function

```
concat = foldr append nil
```

where

```
append :: [a] -> [a] -> [a]
append nil ys = ys
append (cons x xs) ys = cons x (append xs ys)
```

In the computation of the abstract interpretation of the simplest instance of concat, foldr $r_{L(2), L(2)}^{\mathcal{S}}$ is involved. This is because

$$
\operatorname{concat}_{\mathbf{2}}^{\mathcal{S}}=\text { foldr }_{L(2), L(\mathbf{2})}^{\mathcal{S}} \text { append }_{2}^{\mathcal{S}} \text { nil }^{\mathcal{S}}
$$

Instead of computing foldr $r_{L(2), L(2)}^{\mathcal{S}}$ directly one can use

$$
\Pi G^{e}\left(h_{a}, k_{b}\right) \circ \text { fold } r_{2,2}^{S} \circ F^{c}\left(h_{a}, k_{b}\right)
$$

where both $h_{a}$ and $k_{b}$ range over all the embedding-closure pairs from 2 to $L(\mathbf{2})$. Notice that

$$
F(A, B)=A \rightarrow B \rightarrow B \text { and } G(A, B)=B \rightarrow L(A) \rightarrow B
$$

These definitions follow from the type of the function.
According to Seward's experiments, the use of the above approximation in analysing concat makes it 750 times faster than computing it directly. Moreover, the approximate value coincides with the exact value in this case. In this kind of examples, we are free to use Wadler's domains because, the lattices under consideration are chains.

### 7.6 Semantic Polymorphic Invariance

We have already promised to prove the semantic polymorphic invariance of some properties of functions defined on lists. The properties which were considered in the monomorphic case are tail-strictness and hyper-strictness. We study the invariance of these properties. In order to do this we need some definitions.

## List as a functor on $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$

Corresponding to the list type constructor we define a mapping List on the category of domains and embedding-closure pairs, $\mathcal{C}^{e c}$. For any domain $D$ let $\operatorname{List}(D)$ denote the domain of lists whose elements come from $D$. For any embedding-closure pair $h$ : $D \rightarrow{ }^{e c} E$, we define $\operatorname{List}(h): \operatorname{List}(D) \rightarrow{ }^{e c} \operatorname{List}(E)$ by $\operatorname{List}(h)=\left(m a p h^{e}, m a p h^{c}\right)$, where map is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{map} k \perp & =\perp \\
\operatorname{map} k[] & =[] \\
\operatorname{map} k(\text { cons } x x s) & =\operatorname{cons}(k(x))(\text { map } k x s)
\end{aligned}
$$

To show that List(h) is indeed an embedding-closure pair is not difficult. The only remark which perhaps is necessary to make here is, that when both $x s$ and $y s$ are infinite lists, the proof of

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{map} h^{c}\left(\text { map } h^{e}(\text { cons } x x s)\right) & =\text { cons } x x s \\
\operatorname{map} h^{e}\left(\operatorname{maph}^{c}(\text { cons } y y s)\right) & \sqsupseteq \text { cons } y y s
\end{aligned}
$$

follows by using partial lists approximating $x s$ and $y s$ and the continuity of the functions involved; all the remaining cases are easy to verify. It is now easy to check that List is a functor from $\mathcal{C}^{\text {ec }}$ to itself.

## Semantics of case

For domains $D$ and $E$, let case $e_{D, E}$ be the concrete semantics of an instance of case, where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\operatorname{case}_{D, E}(a, f, \perp) & =\perp \\
\operatorname{case}_{D, E}(a, f,[]) & =a \\
\operatorname{case}_{D, E}(a, f, \operatorname{cons} x x s) & =f(x, x s)
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, we want to show that the collection of such functions is a lax natural transformation from $F$ to $G$, where

$$
F(D, E)=E \times(D \times \operatorname{List}(D) \rightarrow E) \times \operatorname{List}(D) \text { and } G(D, E)=E
$$

Suppose $h: D \rightarrow{ }^{e c} R$ and $k: E \rightarrow{ }^{e c} S$ are embedding-closure pairs. Then,

$$
F^{e}(h, k)=\left(k^{e}, \lambda g . k^{e} \circ g \circ\left(h^{c} \times \operatorname{List}^{c}(h)\right), \operatorname{List}^{e}(h)\right) \text { and } G^{e}(h, k)=k^{e} .
$$

Now,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(c a s e_{R, S} \circ F^{e}(h, k)\right)(a, f, \perp) & =\perp \\
\left(\text { case }_{R, S} \circ F^{e}(h, k)\right)(a, f,[]) & =k^{e}(a) \\
\left(\text { case }_{R, S} \circ F^{e}(h, k)\right)(a, f, \text { cons } x x s) & =k^{e}\left(f\left(h^{c}\left(h^{e}(x)\right), \operatorname{map}^{c}\left(\operatorname{map}^{e} x s\right)\right)\right) \\
& =k^{e}(f(x, x s))
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(G^{e}(h, k) \circ \operatorname{case}_{D, E}\right)(a, f, \perp) & =k^{e}(\perp) \\
\left(G^{e}(h, k) \circ \operatorname{case}_{D, E}\right)(a, f,[]) & =k^{e}(a) \\
\left(G^{e}(h, k) \circ \operatorname{case}_{D, E}\right)(a, f, \operatorname{cons} x x s) & =k^{e}(f(x, x s))
\end{aligned}
$$

From the two sets of equations above, it is easy to observe that

$$
c a s e_{R, S} \circ F^{e}(h, k) \sqsubseteq G^{e}(h, k) \circ c a s e_{D, E}
$$

Therefore, the collection is a lax natural transformation.

Suppose the f in the definition of g is polymorphic with type $\forall t . t \times[t] \rightarrow H(t)$ so that it is possible to assume that

$$
f_{R} \circ\left(h^{e} \times L i s t^{e}(h)\right) \sqsubseteq H^{e}(h) \circ f_{D}
$$

where $f$ is the semantics of $f$. Also, if we assume that $a_{R} \sqsubseteq H^{e}(h)\left(a_{D}\right)$, where $a_{D}$ and $a_{R}$ are the semantics of a in $H(D)$ and in $H(R)$ respectively, this statement together with the result that we just proved imply that

$$
g_{R} \circ L i s t^{e}(h) \sqsubseteq H^{e}(h) \circ g_{D}
$$

That is, g is interpreted by a lax natural transformation. To see this, use $H(D)$, $H(R)$, and $H(h)$ instead of $E, S$, and $k$ respectively in the proof above.

Coming back to the question of invariance :

- Suppose that $g_{D}$ is tail-strict. Without loss of generality, assume $D$ is the two-element lattice 2. We want to show that $g_{R}$ is tail-strict. Suppose $y s$ is either an infinite or a partial list. We have to show that $g_{R}(y s)=\perp$. From the lax natural transformation condition we have

$$
g_{R}(y s) \sqsubseteq\left(H^{e}(h) \circ g_{2} \circ \operatorname{List}^{c}(h)\right)(y s)
$$

Since $\operatorname{List}^{c}(h)(y s)$ is also an infinite or a partial list, and $g_{2}$ is tail-strict, it follows that

$$
g_{R}(y s) \sqsubseteq H^{e}(h)(\perp)
$$

This is true for all $h$. As in Chapter 5, if we assume that $R$ has a top element then there always exists an embedding-closure pair $h$ for which the embedding component $h^{e}$ is strict, and moreover $H^{e}(h)$ is also strict. Hence, we have

$$
g_{R}(y s)=\perp
$$

Therefore, $g_{R}$ is also tail-strict.

- On the other hand, suppose $g_{2}$ is hyper-strict. To prove that $g_{R}$ is also hyperstrict, let $y s$ be any list that is not total. Now, it is not difficult to show that $L_{i s t^{c}}(h)(y s)$ is also not total. Thus, the inequality

$$
g_{R}(y s) \sqsubseteq\left(H^{e}(h) \circ g_{2} \circ \operatorname{List}^{c}(h)\right)(y s)
$$

implies that

$$
g_{R}(y s) \sqsubseteq H^{e}(h)(\perp)
$$

By an argument similar to the previous case, we have $g_{R, S}(y s)=\perp$, that is, $g_{R}$ is hyper-strict.

What we have done so far is to prove a partial result. Roughly, what it says is that if any of the properties holds for smaller instances of a polymorphic function then that property must also hold for the higher instances as well. To complete the proof it is necessary to prove the other half. That is, if the higher (complex) instances have the property, so do the smaller (simpler) ones. However, as was shown in Chapter 5, one needs to use the category of domains and embedding-projection pairs to do this. The lax natural transformation condition for $g$ between functors on this category implies that

$$
H^{p}(h) \circ g_{R} \circ \operatorname{List}^{e}(h) \sqsupseteq g_{D}
$$

for all embedding-projection pairs $h: D \rightarrow^{e p} R$. Notice also that the functor List here is different from the one that was being use so far. From this inequality, the remaining half of the proof is obtained.

The statement about the invariance of hyper-strictness is perhaps vacuous. It appears that there are no examples of hyper-strict polymorphic functions in the language. In fact, that is what one would intuitively expect. We included the proof of its invariance because no extra effort was required.

## Chapter 8

## Further Applications

There are other analyses of programs that can be done by abstract interpretation in a way similar to strictness analysis. The inefficiency in computing fixed points by iteration is also present in these analyses, so we have problems similar to the ones we had before with polymorphic functions. Fortunately, techniques similar to those used in Chapter 6 can also be applied here. That is, an approximation to the abstract interpretation of any instance of a polymorphic function can be obtained from that of the simplest.

The two analyses which we study here are binding-time analysis and termination analysis.

### 8.1 Binding-Time Analysis

For the purpose of partial evaluation, expressions in a program may be classified as static or dynamic. Any expression that can be evaluated during partial evaluation would be classified as static, and all other expressions are classified as dynamic. Binding-time analysis is the analysis which determines these properties. One way of performing this is by abstract interpretation. As one would expect, there may be expressions which are static but this fact may not be detected by the abstract interpretation. We have a similar situation in strictness analysis; there are strict
functions whose strictness could not be detected by the abstract interpretation we were discussing in the previous chapters.

In the first-order case, the abstract interpretation for binding-time analysis is done on the two-element domain $\{S, D\}$ with $S \sqsubset D$, where $S$ represents the property of being static and $D$ represents the property of being dynamic. An abstract interpretation that uses this domain is given by Sestoft [46]. Strictly speaking, any expression for which we could not decide if it is static is classified as dynamic. There is some analogy between $D$ here and 1 as used in strictness analysis.

### 8.1.1 Higher-Order Functions

An abstract interpretation for binding-time analysis of a simply-typed $\lambda$-calculus with constants was defined by Hunt and Sands [26]. Our study of polymorphic functions will make use of this abstract interpretation. Their method is very similar to the one used in the strictness analysis of higher-order functions by Burn et al [11].

The notation we shall follow will be similar to the one in Chapter 5. Assume that int and bool are the only basic types, and that Int and Bool are their respective semantic domains. The abstract domains corresponding to these semantic domains (or types) are given by

$$
\text { Abs Int }=A b s \text { Bool }=\{S, D\}
$$

The abstract domains corresponding to products and function spaces are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
A b s\left(D_{1} \times D_{2}\right) & =\left(\text { Abs } D_{1}\right) \times\left(\text { Abs } D_{2}\right) \\
\text { Abs }\left(D_{1} \rightarrow D_{2}\right) & =\left(\text { Abs } D_{1}\right) \rightarrow\left(\text { Abs } D_{2}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Hunt and Sands also deal with lists, however we will delay this until later.

### 8.1.2 Interpretation of Terms

If one identifies 0 with $S$ and 1 with $D$, there is a similarity between the abstract interpretation for strictness analysis in [11] and the one used in binding-time analysis.

The only difference is that here

- integer and boolean constants are interpreted by $S$.
- the usual binary operators,,$+- *$ and / are interpreted by $\sqcup$.
- the conditional if is interpreted by $i f^{\mathcal{B}}$, where for a lattice $A$,

$$
i f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}:\{S, D\} \rightarrow A \rightarrow A \rightarrow A
$$

is given by

$$
i f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}} a b c=\left\{\begin{array}{cc}
\top_{A} & \text { if } a=D \\
b \sqcup c & \text { if } a=S
\end{array}\right.
$$

Obviously, we are assuming that $A$ is the lattice that corresponds to the type of the appropriate instance of if.

The remaining expressions are interpreted in exactly the same way as for strictness analysis, and of course, subject to the identification of elements of the abstract domains which we mentioned above.

Notation. For any function $f$, we shall denote its abstract version by $f^{\mathcal{B}}(\mathcal{B}$ refers to the fact that we are dealing with the abstract interpretation for binding-time analysis).

## Examples

(1) Let

$$
f x y z=\text { if } x(y-1)(y+1)
$$

Now, $f^{\mathcal{B}}$ is given by

$$
f^{\mathcal{B}} x y z= \begin{cases}\top & \text { if } x=D \\ y & \text { if } x=S\end{cases}
$$

Therefore, if $E_{0}$ and $E_{1}$ are static, for example, then $f E_{0} E_{1} E_{2}$ is also static even when $E_{2}$ is dynamic.
(2) Let

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathrm{g} x=\text { if True } 0 \mathrm{x} \\
& \mathrm{~h} x=0
\end{aligned}
$$

Clearly, g and h have the same semantics. On the other hand, for every $x$

$$
g^{\mathcal{B}} x=x \text { and } h^{\mathcal{B}} x=S
$$

From this we conclude that $\mathrm{h} E$ is static for every $E$, whereas this is not the case for g E. More precisely, the abstract interpretation detects that $\mathrm{g} E$ is static only when $E$ is static.

### 8.1.3 Polymorphism

Because of the similarity with the abstract interpretation for strictness analysis, to conclude that the abstract interpretation (for binding-time analysis) of any polymorphic function is a lax natural transformation, we only need to look at the functions whose interpretation are defined differently. In fact, the only function that we need to check is the conditional.

We show that the collection $\left\{i f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation between the functors $F$ and $G$ on the category of finite lattices and embedding-closure pairs, where

$$
F(A)=\{S, D\} \text { and } G(A)=A \rightarrow A \rightarrow A
$$

The actions of $F$ and $G$ on morphisms are given in the usual way; in fact $F$ is the constant functor always returning the identity morphism on $\{S, D\}$. Now, let $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ be an embedding-closure pair. Since $F^{e}(h)=i d$, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(i f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ F^{e}(h)\right) S b c & =i f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} S b c \\
& =b \sqcup_{B} c \\
\left(i f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ F^{e}(h)\right) D b c & =i f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} D b c \\
& =\top_{B}
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(G^{e}(h) \circ i f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}\right) S b c & =h^{e}\left(i f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}} S h^{c}(b) h^{c}(c)\right) \\
& =h^{e}\left(h^{c}(b) \sqcup_{A} h^{c}(c)\right) \\
& =h^{e}\left(h^{c}\left(b \sqcup_{B} c\right)\right) \\
& \sqsupseteq b \sqcup_{B} c \\
& =\left(i f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ F^{e}(h)\right) S b c
\end{aligned}
$$

Also,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(G^{e}(h) \circ i f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}\right) D b c & =h^{e}\left(i f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}} D h^{c}(b) h^{c}(c)\right) \\
& =h^{e}\left(\top_{A}\right) \\
& =\top_{B} \\
& =\left(i f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ F^{e}(h)\right) D b c
\end{aligned}
$$

Combining all these we have

$$
i f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ F^{e}(h) \sqsubseteq G^{e}(h) \circ i f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}
$$

That is, the collection is indeed a lax natural transformation form $F$ to $G$.
The operation $\sqcup$ in the definition above should normally be indexed by the appropriate lattice. In fact, we have already shown, in Chapter 3, that the collection $\left\{\sqcup_{A}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation between the functors $I d \times I d$ and $I d$.

Now in general, for any polymorphic function f of type $\forall t . F(t) \rightarrow G(t)$, we have

$$
f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ F^{e}(h) \sqsubseteq G^{e}(h) \circ f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}
$$

and hence,

$$
f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \sqsubseteq \Pi G^{e}(h) \circ f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ F^{c}(h)
$$

The greatest lower bound is taken over all possible embedding-closure pairs $h$. As in strictness analysis, if $\mathbf{f}$ is recursive and $B$ is a big lattice then the computation of $f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}}$ by iterative means is normally very expensive. Instead, because of the above inequality, we let $A=\{S, D\}$ and first compute $f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}$ by iteration, and then build an approximation to $f_{B}^{\mathcal{B}}$ from it.

One of the desirable features of the abstract interpretation described above is that it also works for higher-order functions. This is a noteworthy advance over the work of Launchbury [33] where he uses projections in his binding-time analysis of polymorphic first-order functions.

### 8.1.4 Lists

Hunt and Sands also deal with lists. The abstract domain they use in the abstract interpretation of, for example, lists of integers is the three-element domain

$$
\{S P I N E(S), S P I N E(D), D\}
$$

where

$$
S P I N E(S) \sqsubset S P I N E(D) \sqsubset D
$$

$S P I N E(x)$ is the property of a list with static structure with all its elements having property $x$.

In general, for any finite lattice $A$, they define the domain

$$
\{S P I N E(a) \mid a \in A\} \cup\{D\}
$$

where $D$ is the top element, and $\operatorname{SPINE}(a) \sqsubseteq \operatorname{SPINE(b)}$ if and only if $a \sqsubseteq b$. From now on, we shall denote this domain by $K(A)$. The operator $K$ is analogous to $L$ in the previous chapter.

## $K$ as a functor on $\mathcal{A}^{e c}$

It is now possible to extend the definition of $K$ so that it becomes a functor from the category of finite lattices and embedding-closure pairs to itself. To do this, let $h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} B$ be an embedding-closure pair. Define the functions

$$
K^{e}(h): K(A) \rightarrow K(B) \text { and } K^{c}(h): K(B) \rightarrow K(A)
$$

by

$$
\begin{aligned}
K^{e}(h)(D) & =D \\
K^{e}(h)(\operatorname{SPINE}(a)) & =\operatorname{SPINE}\left(h^{e}(a)\right) \\
K^{c}(h)(D) & =D \\
K^{c}(h)(\operatorname{SPINE}(b)) & =\operatorname{SPINE}\left(h^{c}(b)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Clearly both functions are continuous. Moreover, it is easy to show that ( $\left.K^{e}(h), K^{c}(h)\right)$ is an embedding-closure pair and furthermore, $K$ is a functor; we omit the verification.

## Definition of cons ${ }^{\mathcal{B}}$

Going back to some operations that are defined on lists, we first consider cons. Now, as given in [26] for the monomorphic case

$$
\operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}: A \times K(A) \rightarrow K(A)
$$

is defined by

$$
\operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}(a, l)= \begin{cases}D & \text { if } l=D \\ \operatorname{SPINE}\left(a \sqcup a^{\prime}\right) & \text { if } l=\operatorname{SPINE}\left(a^{\prime}\right)\end{cases}
$$

Also $n i l_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}=\operatorname{SPINE}\left(\perp_{A}\right)$. Clearly $\operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}$ is continuous. Moreover, the collection $\left\{\operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation between the functors $I d \times K$ and $K$. To show this we note the following

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(K^{e}(h) \circ \operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}\right)(a, D) & =K^{e}(h)(D) \\
& =D \\
\left(K^{e}(h) \circ \operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}\right)\left(a, \operatorname{SPINE}\left(a^{\prime}\right)\right) & =K^{e}(h)\left(\operatorname{SPINE}\left(a \sqcup a^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& =\operatorname{SPINE}\left(h^{e}\left(a \sqcup a^{\prime}\right)\right) \\
& \sqsupseteq \operatorname{SPINE}\left(h^{e}(a) \sqcup h^{e}\left(a^{\prime}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\operatorname{cons}_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ\left(h^{e} \times K^{e}(h)\right)\right)(a, D) & =\operatorname{cons}_{B}^{\mathcal{B}}\left(h^{e}(a), K^{e}(h)(D)\right) \\
& =\operatorname{cons}_{B}^{\mathcal{B}}\left(h^{e}(a), D\right) \\
& =D \\
\left(\operatorname{cons}_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ\left(h^{e} \times K^{e}(h)\right)\right)\left(a, \operatorname{SPINE}\left(a^{\prime}\right)\right) & =\operatorname{cons}_{B}^{\mathcal{B}}\left(h^{e}(a), \operatorname{SPINE}\left(h^{e}\left(a^{\prime}\right)\right)\right) \\
& =\operatorname{SPINE}\left(h^{e}(a) \sqcup h^{e}\left(a^{\prime}\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

From these statements, we obtain the desired result. That is,

$$
\operatorname{cons}_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ\left(h^{e} \times K^{e}(h)\right) \sqsubseteq K^{e}(h) \circ \operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}
$$

Notice also that

$$
\begin{aligned}
n i l_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} & =\operatorname{SPINE}\left(\perp_{B}\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq \operatorname{SPINE}\left(h^{e}\left(\perp_{A}\right)\right) \\
& =K^{e}(h)\left(\operatorname{SPINE}\left(\perp_{A}\right)\right) \\
& =K^{e}(h)\left(n i l_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, $n i l_{B}^{\mathcal{B}} \sqsubseteq K^{e}(h)\left(n i l_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}\right)$; this property will be used later.

## Definition and properties of case ${ }^{\mathcal{B}}$

As in Chapter 7, we concentrate on functions defined in terms of case. An important issue here is how to define

$$
\operatorname{case}_{A, B}^{\mathcal{B}}: B \times(A \times K(A) \rightarrow B) \times K(A) \rightarrow B
$$

To motivate the definition which we will give, let $b \in B, f: A \times K(A) \rightarrow B$, and $a s \in K(A)$. Now, case $\mathcal{A}_{A, B}^{\mathcal{B}}(b, f, a s)$ should depend on the nature of $a s$.

- If $a s=D$ it is reasonable to let $c a s e_{A, B}^{\mathcal{B}}(b, f, a s)=D$
- If $a s=S P I N E(v)$ then the list whose abstraction is given to be $a s$ is either nil or cons x x. In the latter case, its abstract version will be something of the form $\operatorname{cons}_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}(a, l)$ for some $a$ and $l$, and moreover $l$ itself must be of the form SPINE( $\left.a^{\prime}\right)$ for some $a^{\prime}$. Hence, it is safe to assume that both $a$ and $a^{\prime}$ are equal to $v$. Thus, we define

$$
\operatorname{case}_{A, B}^{\mathcal{B}}(b, f, a s)=b \sqcup(f(v, S P I N E(v)))
$$

Statements analogous to those about the abstract interpretation for strictness can now be made. That is, $\left\{\operatorname{case}_{A, B}^{\mathcal{B}}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation between the functors $F$ and $G$, where

$$
F(A, B)=B \times(A \times K(A) \rightarrow B) \times K(A) \text { and } G(A, B)=B
$$

Again, their action on morphisms is defined in the usual way. Now, suppose we have finite lattices $A, B, C$ and $D$, and embedding-closure pairs

$$
h: A \rightarrow{ }^{e c} C \text { and } k: B \rightarrow{ }^{e c} D
$$

Now, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(k^{e} \circ c a s e_{A, B}^{\mathcal{B}}\right)(b, f, D) & =k^{e}(D) \\
& =D \quad \text { (since } k^{e} T \text {-preserving) }
\end{aligned}
$$

Also,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(k^{e} \circ \operatorname{case} e_{A, B}^{\mathcal{B}}\right)(b, f, \operatorname{SPINE}(v)) & =k^{e}(b \sqcup(f(v, \operatorname{SPINE}(v)))) \\
& \sqsupseteq k^{e}(b) \sqcup k^{e}(f(v, \operatorname{SPINE}(v)))
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand, letting

$$
M=\operatorname{cas} e_{C, D}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ\left(k^{e} \times \lambda u .\left(k^{e} \circ u \circ\left(h^{c} \times K^{c}(h)\right)\right) \times K^{e}(h)\right)
$$

we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
M(b, f, D) & =D \\
M(b, f, S P I N E(v)) & =\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{B}}\left(k^{e}(b), k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times K^{c}(h)\right), K^{e}(h)(\operatorname{SPINE}(v))\right) \\
& =\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{B}}\left(k^{e}(b), k^{e} \circ f \circ\left(h^{c} \times K^{c}(h)\right), \operatorname{SPINE}\left(h^{e}(v)\right)\right) \\
& =k^{e}(b) \sqcup k^{e}\left(f\left(h^{c}\left(h^{e}(v)\right), K^{c}(h)\left(\operatorname{SPINE}\left(h^{e}(v)\right)\right)\right)\right) \\
& =k^{e}(b) \sqcup k^{e}(f(v, \operatorname{SPINE}(v)))
\end{aligned}
$$

It is now easy to see that the collection is indeed a lax natural transformation. That is,

$$
\operatorname{case}_{C, D}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ F^{e}(h, k) \sqsubseteq G^{e}(h, k) \circ \operatorname{case}_{A, B}^{\mathcal{B}}
$$

Recall the definition of the function $g$ which was given in Chapter 7 by

$$
g(x s)=\operatorname{case}(a, f, x s)
$$

Assuming that f is polymorphic with type $\forall t . t \times[t] \rightarrow H(t)$ and hence

$$
f_{C}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ\left(h^{e} \times K^{e}(h)\right) \sqsubseteq H^{e}(h) \circ f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}
$$

and also that

$$
a_{C}^{\mathcal{B}} \sqsubseteq H^{e}(h)\left(a_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}\right)
$$

we can show that

$$
g_{C}^{\mathcal{B}} \sqsubseteq H^{e}(h) \circ g_{A}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ K^{c}(h)
$$

(Note that, strictly speaking, we should have $H^{\prime}$ here.) Recall that for any $x s$

$$
g_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}(x s)=\operatorname{case} e_{A, H(A)}^{\mathcal{B}}\left(a_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}, f_{A}^{\mathcal{B}}, x s\right)
$$

Taking greatest lower bound over all possible expressions of the form which appear in the right hand side of the above inequality, we obtain a good approximation. We normally would replace $A$ by $\{S, D\}$ to use the simplest instance. Identifying $\{S, D\}$ with 2, we have

$$
g_{C}^{\mathcal{B}} \sqsubseteq \Pi H^{e}\left(h_{u}\right) \circ g_{2}^{\mathcal{B}} \circ K^{c}\left(h_{u}\right)
$$

where $u$ ranges over all non-top elements of $C$.

## Example

The following table is that of append $d_{2}^{\mathcal{B}}$, where append is defined in the usual way. The table is obtained by the usual iterative means. As in strictness analysis, this may be used in the analysis of foldr which in turn is used in the analysis of concat.

| $x s / y s$ | $S P I N E(S)$ | $S P I N E(D)$ | $D$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $S P I N E(S)$ | $S P I N E(S)$ | $S P I N E(D)$ | $D$ |
| $S P I N E(D)$ | $S P I N E(D)$ | $S P I N E(D)$ | $D$ |
| $D$ | $D$ | $D$ | $D$ |

### 8.2 Termination Analysis

The property of functions that one usually looks for when performing termination analysis is dual to strictness. More precisely, for a function $f$ we check if for all $x \neq \perp$ it is the case that $f(x) \neq \perp$. The techniques used in both analysis are, therefore, similar.

Mycroft has shown how abstract interpretation can be used for termination analysis [37]. He deals with first-order functions defined on flat domains. The abstract domains used in this interpretation are exactly those used for strictness analysis. However, in this case 1 represents termination, whereas 0 represents no information. Constants and the conditional are given the following interpretations.

- integer and boolean constants are interpreted by 1.
- the binary operators,,$+- *$ and / are interpreted by $\Pi$.
- the conditional if is interpreted by $i f^{\mathcal{T}}$, where for a lattice $A$,

$$
i f_{A}^{\mathcal{T}}: \mathbf{2} \rightarrow A \rightarrow A \rightarrow A
$$

is given by

$$
i f_{A}^{\mathcal{T}} a b c= \begin{cases}\perp_{A} & \text { if } a=0 \\ b \sqcap c & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}
$$

Again, we are assuming that $A$ is the lattice that corresponds to the type of the appropriate instance of if.

We need not be specific about the lattice $A$ above. In his extension of this interpretation to higher-order functions, Abramsky [4] uses these definitions and the
interpretation of other expressions is defined in a way similar to that for strictness analysis given in [11].

## Polymorphism

We show that the abstract interpretation of a polymorphic function is a lax natural transformation between functors on the category of finite lattices and embeddingprojection pairs, $\mathcal{A}^{e p}$. This is fairly straightforward; except perhaps that of the conditional defined above. Thus, we must consider the collection $\left\{i f_{A}^{\mathcal{T}}\right\}$. Before doing this, notice that normally the $\Pi$ used in the definition above should be indexed by $A$. We have actually shown, in Chapter 3 , that the collection $\left\{\Pi_{A}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation between functors on the category $\mathcal{C}^{e p} \times \mathcal{C}^{e p}$.

Suppose $A$ and $B$ are finite lattices, and $k: A \rightarrow^{e p} B$ is any embedding-projection pair. Notice that this is of the form $\left(k^{e}, k^{p}\right)$ and recall that $k^{e} \circ k^{p} \sqsubseteq i d$ and $k^{p} \circ k^{e}=$ $i d$. Now, letting $F$ and $G$ be the functors given by

$$
F(A)=2 \text { and } G(A)=A \rightarrow A \rightarrow A
$$

where $F(k)$ and $G(k)$ are defined as in Chapter 3, we want to show that the $\left\{i f_{A}^{\mathcal{T}}\right\}$ is a lax natural transformation between $F$ and $G$. To see this consider the following equations

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(i f_{B}^{\mathcal{T}} \circ F^{e}(k)\right) 0 b c & =i f_{B}^{\mathcal{T}} 0 b c \\
& =\perp_{B} \\
\left(i f_{B}^{\mathcal{T}} \circ F^{e}(k)\right) 1 b c & =i f_{B}^{\mathcal{T}} 1 b c \\
& =b \Pi_{B} c
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(G^{e}(k) \circ i f_{A}^{\mathcal{T}}\right) 0 b c & =k^{e}\left(i f_{A}^{\mathcal{T}} 0 k^{p}(b) k^{p}(c)\right) \\
& =k^{e}\left(\perp_{A}\right) \\
& =\perp_{B} \quad\left(\text { since } k^{e} \text { is strict }\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Also,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(G^{e}(k) \circ i f_{A}^{\mathcal{T}}\right) 1 b c & =k^{e}\left(i f_{A}^{\mathcal{T}} 1 k^{p}(b) k^{p}(c)\right) \\
& =k^{e}\left(k^{p}(b) \sqcap_{B} k^{p}(c)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =k^{e}\left(k^{p}\left(b \sqcap_{A} c\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq b \sqcap_{A} c
\end{aligned}
$$

It is now trivial to observe that

$$
G^{e}(k) \circ i f_{A}^{\mathcal{T}} \sqsubseteq i f_{B}^{\mathcal{T}} \circ F^{e}(k)
$$

In general, the abstract interpretation of any polymorphic function is a lax natural transformation. Furthermore, if $f$ is a lax natural transformation from some functor $F$ to $G$ then the function

$$
\sqcup G^{e}(k) \circ f_{2}^{\mathcal{T}} \circ F^{p}(k)
$$

may be used in place of $f_{B}^{\mathcal{T}}$ because if $x \neq \perp$ and $\left(\sqcup G^{e}(k) \circ f_{2}^{\mathcal{T}} \circ F^{p}(k)\right)(x) \neq \perp$ then $f_{B}^{\mathcal{T}}(x) \neq \perp$.This why embedding-projection pairs are chosen for termination analysis.

## Chapter 9

## Conclusion


#### Abstract

It has been known for a long time that instances of polymorphic functions are semantically related to each other. In this thesis we have seen two particular examples of relationships that are useful for program analysis. The choice of relationship depends on the semantic properties under investigation. In the case of strictness, for example, the relations that arise out of embedding-closure pairs are appropriate. One consequence of using these relations is a proof of a partial result about the semantic polymorphic invariance of strictness. Combining this with the results obtained from the use of embedding-projection pairs, we showed how the full result of polymorphic invariance can be proved. We have also stated and proved the appropriate invariance results for functions defined on lists.


The abstract interpretation of any polymorphic function was regarded as the standard interpretation of some polymorphic function in a language of abstract terms, where the semantic domains are finite lattices. This enabled us to use results from our study of the original language and its semantics; in particular, that the abstract interpretation of any polymorphic function is a lax natural transformation. It is interesting to note that the semantic polymorphic invariance of strictness in the language of abstract terms implies that the strictness analysis of the original language by abstract interpretation is polymorphically invariant.

We studied lax natural transformations on the category of finite lattices and embedding-closure pairs in some detail. This effort was rewarded by our ability
to build approximate values to the abstract interpretation of any instance of a polymorphic function from that of the smallest. This is the solution proposed to the central problem which was described at the beginning. It is the main contribution of this thesis. Seward has already built an efficient strictness analyser based on this method.

The lax natural transformation condition also holds in the presence of lists. However, the abstract domains used in the abstract interpretation of functions defined on lists are those of Nielson and Nielson. The disadvantage of this over the use of Wadler's abstract domains is that the domains are bigger. Consequently, in some cases the number of functions involved in building an approximation are by that much bigger, and hence making the process less efficient. On the other hand, there are several examples that arise in practice where the two domains are of the same size. In particular, this is so when the types being considered do not involve products.

Binding-time analysis was given less space in the thesis. However, every result that was proved about strictness analysis has a counterpart in binding-time analysis. This does not apply to functions defined on lists, because the abstract domains used in the analyses of lists are different. We have also shown that termination analysis can be treated in much the same way by using embedding-projection pairs.

It is worth recalling that the method of finding approximations in each analysis should only be applied in the case of recursive functions. In other cases, the cost of building approximations is likely to be more expensive than evaluating the actual value directly.

Because of their size, we would have liked to use Wadler's abstract domains in the strictness analysis of lists. But then it would be necessary to prove that $\left\{\right.$ case $\left.{ }^{\mathcal{S}}\right\}$ (Wadler's version) is a lax natural transformation. We have not managed to do this. More experiments are required to assess how the use of the domains by Nielson and Nielson affects the performance of strictness analysers.

Results about binding-time analysis must be comparable to those on strictness analysis. But, if the language is to include lists, separate experiments must be performed. However, it is not difficult to show that, binding-time analysis of lists is cheaper than
strictness analysis because of the size of the abstract domains used.

## Appendix A

## The Representation Theorem

## Theorem 5.2.1

Let $S_{1}$ and $S_{2}$ be domain assignments. Let $\Gamma$ be a type assignment. Let $\eta_{1}$ and $\eta_{2}$ be two environments such that $\eta_{i}(x) \in \mathcal{T} \llbracket \Gamma(x) \rrbracket S_{i}$ for all $x \in \operatorname{dom}(\Gamma)$ and $i=1,2$. Suppose for each type variable $t$, we have an embedding-closure pair $\rho(t): S_{1}(t) \rightarrow{ }^{e c} S_{2}(t)$. Let $h_{\tau}$ stand for $\mathcal{T} \llbracket \tau \rrbracket \rho$.

If $\eta_{1}$ and $\eta_{2}$ are related, i.e., for all $x \in \operatorname{dom}(\Gamma)$

$$
h_{\Gamma(x)}^{e}\left(\eta_{1}(x)\right) \sqsupseteq \eta_{2}(x),
$$

then for each formula $\Gamma \vdash E: \tau$ we have

$$
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
$$

## Proof

It is important to remember that both the condition and the statement of the theorem could equivalently be expressed in terms of the $h^{c}$ 's instead of the $h^{e}$ 's. That is, the statement is the same as

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1} \sqsupseteq h_{\tau}^{c}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)
$$

The proof is now given by structural induction on terms.
(1) If $k$ is a constant of type $b$ then

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, b} \llbracket k \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}=\mu_{\Gamma, b} \llbracket k \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
$$

and since $h_{b}^{e}$ is an identity we have the desired inequality.
(2) Since $\mu_{\Gamma, \Gamma(x)} \llbracket x \rrbracket S_{i} \eta_{i}=\eta_{i}(x)$ for $i=1,2$, the statement follows from the fact that $\eta_{1}(x)$ is related to $\eta_{2}(x)$ by hypothesis.
(3) Suppose $\Gamma \vdash E_{1}: \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}$ and $\Gamma \vdash E_{2}: \tau$

Now,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket\left(E_{1} E_{2}\right) \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \\
& {[\text { defn. of } \mu] } \\
&= h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{e}\left(\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right)\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right)\right) \\
& {[\text { inductive hypothesis }] } \\
& \sqsupseteq h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{e}\left(\left(h_{\tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}^{c}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right)\left(h_{\tau}^{c}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right)\right) \\
& {\left[\text { defn. of } h_{\tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}^{c}\right] } \\
&= h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{e}\left(\left(h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{c} \circ\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right) \circ h_{\tau}^{e}\right)\left(h_{\tau}^{c}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right)\right) \\
&= h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{e}\left(h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{c}\left(\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\left(h_{\tau}^{e}\left(h_{\tau}^{c}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right)\right)\right)\right) \\
& {[\text { inductive hypothesis }] } \\
& \sqsupseteq\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right) \\
&= \mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket\left(E_{1} E_{2}\right) \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

(4) Suppose $\Gamma, x: \tau \vdash E: \tau^{\prime}$. Since $\eta_{1}$ and $\eta_{2}$ are related, for each $d^{\prime} \in \mathcal{T} \llbracket \tau \sharp S_{2}$, $\eta_{1}\left[h_{\tau}^{c}\left(d^{\prime}\right) / x\right]$ and $\eta_{2}\left[d^{\prime} / x\right]$ are related. This is because $h_{\tau}^{e}\left(h_{\tau}^{c}\left(d^{\prime}\right)\right) \sqsupseteq d^{\prime}$. By induction assumption,

$$
h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\left[h_{\tau}^{c}\left(d^{\prime}\right) / x\right]\right) \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\left[d^{\prime} / x\right]
$$

Now,

$$
h_{\tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket \lambda x: \tau . E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right)
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& {\left[\text { defn. of } h_{\tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}^{e}\right] } \\
= & h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{e} \circ\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket \lambda x: \tau . E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \circ h_{\tau}^{c} \\
= & \lambda d^{\prime} \in\left(\mathcal{T} \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{2}\right) \cdot h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\left[h_{\tau}^{c}\left(d^{\prime}\right) / x\right]\right) \\
& {[\text { inductive hypothesis] }} \\
\sqsupseteq & \lambda d^{\prime} \in\left(\mathcal{T} \llbracket \tau \rrbracket S_{2}\right) \cdot \mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\left[d^{\prime} / x\right] \\
= & \mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket \lambda x: \tau \cdot E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

(5) Suppose $\Gamma \vdash<E_{1}, E_{2}>: \tau \times \tau^{\prime}$

By induction assumption,

$$
\begin{aligned}
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) & \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2} \text { and } \\
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, r^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) & \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Now,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& h_{\tau \times \tau^{\prime}}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket<E_{1}, E_{2}>\rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \\
& =\left(h_{\tau}^{e} \times h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{e}\right)\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}, \mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \\
& =\left(h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right), h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right)\right) \\
& \geq\left(\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right),\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right) \\
& =\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket<E_{1}, E_{2}>\rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

(6) Suppose $\Gamma \vdash E: \tau \times \tau^{\prime}$. We want to show that

$$
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \mathrm{fst} \tau \times \tau^{\prime} E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \mathrm{fst} \tau \times \tau^{\prime} E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
$$

By induction assumption we have :

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times r^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1} \supseteq h_{\tau \times r^{\prime}}^{c}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times r^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)
$$

Now,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \mathrm{fst} \tau \times \tau^{\prime} E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \\
& \quad=h_{\tau}^{e}\left(f \operatorname{st}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right)\right) \\
& \quad \sqsupseteq h_{\tau}^{e}\left(f s t\left(h_{\tau \times \tau^{\prime}}^{c}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& =h_{\tau}^{e}\left(f s t\left(\left(h_{\tau}^{c} \times h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{c}\right)\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right)\right) \\
& =h_{\tau}^{e}\left(f s t\left(h_{\tau}^{c}\left(f s t\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right), h_{\tau^{\prime}}^{c}\left(\operatorname{snd}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right)\right)\right) \\
& =h_{\tau}^{e}\left(h_{\tau}^{c}\left(f s t\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right)\right) \\
& \sqsupseteq f s t\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right) \\
& =\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \mathrm{fst} \tau \times \tau^{\prime} E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly, we can show that a similar proposition holds for the term snd $\tau \times \tau^{\prime} E$.
(7) Suppose $\Gamma \vdash$ if $\tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2}: \tau$, and for $i=1,2$ assume that

$$
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{i} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{i} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
$$

and

$$
h_{\text {bool }}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \text { bool }} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \text { bool }} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
$$

Since $h_{\text {bool }}^{e}=i d$, at least one of the following holds :

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mu_{\Gamma, \text { bool }} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}=\perp, \quad \text { or } \\
& \mu_{\Gamma, \text { bool }} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}=\mu_{\Gamma, \text { bool }} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

In the former case,

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \llbracket \text { if } \tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}=\perp}
$$

and hence

$$
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \text { if } \tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2} \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right) \sqsupseteq \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \text { if } \tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2} \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
$$

The second case together with the induction assumption also yields the desired result.

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \mathrm{fix} \tau E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right)=h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right)^{n}(\perp)\right) \tag{8}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& {\left[\text { continuity of } h_{\tau}^{e}\right] } \\
\sqsupseteq & \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty} h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{1} \eta_{1}\right)^{n}(\perp)\right) \\
& {[\text { inductive hypothesis }] } \\
\sqsupseteq & \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty} h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\left(h_{\tau \rightarrow \tau}^{c}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)\right)^{n}(\perp)\right) \\
& {\left[\text { defn. of } h_{\tau \rightarrow \tau}^{c}\right] } \\
= & \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty} h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\left(h_{\tau}^{c} \circ\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right) \circ h_{\tau}^{e}\right)^{n}(\perp)\right) \\
& {\left[h_{\tau}^{e} \circ h_{\tau}^{c} \sqsupseteq i d\right] } \\
\sqsupseteq & \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty} h_{\tau}^{e}\left(\left(h_{\tau}^{c} \circ\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)^{n} \circ h_{\tau}^{e}\right)(\perp)\right) \\
\sqsupseteq & \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}\right)^{n}(\perp) \\
= & \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \mathrm{fix} \tau E \rrbracket S_{2} \eta_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

(9) Suppose $\Gamma \vdash$ let $x: \sigma=E_{1}$ in $E_{2}: \tau$. Since the semantics of this is defined in terms of that of the term $E_{2}\left[E_{1} / x\right]$, for the purposes of this proof we may assume that we do not have let-expressions. We make similar assumptions about instantiations.

## Appendix B

## The Safety Condition

## Proposition 6.4.1

Suppose we have the formula $\Gamma \vdash E: \tau$ and that $S$ is a domain assignment which assigns type variables domains from $\mathcal{D}$. Let $\eta$ be an environment. Let $S^{\prime}$ be the lattice assignment such that for any type variable $t, S^{\prime}(t)=A b s S(t)$.

If $\eta^{\prime}$ is any environment such that for any variable $x \in \operatorname{dom}(\Gamma), a b s_{\Gamma(x)}(\eta(x)) \sqsubseteq \eta^{\prime}(x)$, then

$$
a b s_{\tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right) \sqsubseteq \nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s} \llbracket \llbracket E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}
$$

where $\Gamma^{\prime} \vdash E^{\prime}: \tau^{\prime}$ is the translation of the above formula.

## Proof

The proof is given by induction on the structure of terms.
(1) For every basic type $b$, by definition of $\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s b}$ the two expressions are actually equal.
(2) If $x \in \operatorname{dom}(\Gamma)$ then

$$
a b s_{\Gamma(x)}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \Gamma(x)} \llbracket x \rrbracket S \eta\right)=a b s_{\Gamma(x)}(\eta(x))
$$

By assumption on the environments, the statement follows.
(3) If $E_{1} \in A_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}$ and $E_{2} \in A_{\Gamma, \tau}$ then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a b s_{\tau^{\prime}}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket\left(E_{1} E_{2}\right) \rrbracket S \eta\right) \\
&= a b s_{\tau^{\prime}}\left(\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta\right)\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta\right)\right) \\
& {[\text { property of } a b s] } \\
& \sqsubseteq\left(a b s_{\tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{1} E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta\right)\right)\left(a b s_{\tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta\right)\right) \\
& \text { inductive hypothesis } \\
& \sqsubseteq\left(\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s\left(\tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}\right)} \llbracket E_{1}^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}\right)\left(\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s \tau} \llbracket E_{2}^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}\right) \\
&= \nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s} \llbracket \llbracket\left(E_{1}^{\prime} E_{2}^{\prime}\right) \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

(4) Suppose $E \in A_{(\Gamma, x: \tau), \tau^{\prime}}$. We want to show that

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a b s_{\tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket \lambda x: \tau \cdot E \rrbracket S \eta\right) \\
& \quad \sqsubseteq \nu_{\Gamma^{\prime},(A b s \tau) \rightarrow\left(A b s \tau^{\prime}\right)} \llbracket \lambda x:(A b s \tau) \cdot E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

That is, for any value $b$ from the appropriate lattice

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(a b s_{\tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket \lambda x: \tau . E \rrbracket S \eta\right)\right)(b) \\
& \quad \sqsubseteq\left(\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime},(A b s \tau) \rightarrow\left(A b s \tau^{\prime}\right)} \llbracket \lambda x:(A b s \tau) . E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}\right)(b)
\end{aligned}
$$

But

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(a b s_{\tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket \lambda x: \tau . E \rrbracket S \eta\right)\right)(b) \\
& \quad=\bigsqcup\left\{a b s_{\tau^{\prime}}\left(\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket \lambda x: \tau . E \rrbracket S \eta\right)(a)\right) \mid a b s_{\tau}(a) \sqsubseteq b\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus, it is sufficient to show that for an arbitrary element $a$ with $a b s_{\tau}(a) \sqsubseteq b$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a b s_{\tau^{\prime}}\left(\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket \lambda x: \tau . E \rrbracket S \eta\right)(a)\right) \\
& \quad \sqsubseteq\left(\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime},(A b s \tau) \rightarrow\left(A b s \tau^{\prime}\right)} \llbracket \lambda x:(A b s \tau) . E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}\right)(b)
\end{aligned}
$$

But

$$
\begin{gathered}
a b s_{\tau^{\prime}}\left(\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket \lambda x: \tau . E \rrbracket S \eta\right)(a)\right) \\
=a b s_{\tau^{\prime}}\left(\mu_{(\Gamma, x: \tau), \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta[a / x]\right) \\
\\
\text { [inductive hypothesis] }
\end{gathered}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\sqsubseteq & \nu_{\left(\Gamma^{\prime}, x:(A b s \tau)\right), A b s} \tau^{\prime} \llbracket E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime}\left(\eta^{\prime}\left[a b s_{\tau}(a) / x\right]\right) \\
& {[\text { monotonicity }] } \\
\sqsubseteq & \nu_{\left(\Gamma^{\prime}, x:(A b s \tau)\right), A b s} \tau^{\prime} \llbracket E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime}\left(\eta^{\prime}[b / x]\right) \\
= & \left.\left(\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime},(A b s \tau) \rightarrow(A b s} \tau^{\prime}\right) \llbracket \lambda x:(A b s \tau) \cdot E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}\right)(b)
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore, we have the desired result.
(5) If $E_{1} \in A_{\Gamma, \tau}$ and $E_{2} \in A_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}}$ then

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a b s_{\tau \times \tau^{\prime}}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket<E_{1}, E_{2}>\rrbracket S \eta\right) \\
&\text { [defn. of } \mu] \\
&= a b s_{\tau \times \tau^{\prime}}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta, \mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta\right) \\
& {[\text { defn. of } a b s] } \\
&=\left(a b s_{\tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta\right), a b s_{\tau^{\prime}}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta\right)\right) \\
& {[\text { inductive hypothesis }] } \\
& \sqsubseteq\left(\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s \tau} \llbracket E_{1}^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}, \nu_{\Gamma, A b s} \llbracket{\tau^{\prime}}_{2}^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}\right) \\
&= \nu_{\Gamma^{\prime},\left(A b s \tau \times \tau^{\prime}\right)} \llbracket<E_{1}^{\prime}, E_{2}^{\prime}>\rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

(6) If $E \in A_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}}$ then

$$
\begin{aligned}
a b s_{\tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \mathrm{fst} \tau \times \tau^{\prime} E \rrbracket S \eta\right) & =a b s_{\tau}\left(f s t\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \times \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right)\right) \\
& =f \operatorname{st}\left(a b s_{\tau \times \tau^{\prime}}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau^{\prime}} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right)\right) \\
& \sqsubseteq f s t\left(\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime},(A b s \tau) \times\left(A b s \tau^{\prime}\right)} \llbracket E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}\right) \\
& =\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s} \llbracket \mathrm{fst} \tau \times \tau^{\prime} E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

The case of snd $\tau \times \tau^{\prime} E$ can be proved in a similar way.
(7) Suppose we have the formula $\Gamma \vdash$ if $\tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2}: \tau$. From this we have $\Gamma^{\prime} \vdash$ cond Abs $\tau$ (or Abs $\tau E_{1}^{\prime} E_{2}^{\prime}$ ) : Abs $\tau$. There are now two cases to consider.
case(i)

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \text { bool }} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S \eta=\perp
$$

In this case

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \text { if } \tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta=\perp
$$

Since $a b s_{\tau}$ is strict,

$$
a b s_{\tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \text { if } \tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta\right)=\perp
$$

Therefore, we have the inequality.
case(ii)

$$
\mu_{\Gamma, \text { bool }} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S \eta \neq \perp
$$

Since $a b s_{\text {bool }}$ is $\perp$-reflecting

$$
a b s_{\text {bool }}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \text { bool }} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S \eta\right) \neq 0
$$

By induction assumption,

$$
a b s_{\text {bool }}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \text { bool }} \llbracket E_{0} \rrbracket S \eta\right) \sqsubseteq \nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, \mathbf{2}} \llbracket E_{0}^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}
$$

Hence,

$$
\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, 2} \llbracket E_{0}^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}=1
$$

Therefore,

$$
\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s \tau} \llbracket \operatorname{cond} A b s \tau E_{0}^{\prime}\left(\text { or } E_{1}^{\prime} E_{2}^{\prime}\right) \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}=\sqcup_{A}\left(v_{1}, v_{2}\right)
$$

where for $i=1,2$

$$
\begin{aligned}
v_{i} & =\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s} \tau \llbracket E_{i}^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}, \quad \text { and } \\
A & =\mathcal{T}^{\prime} \llbracket A b s \tau \rrbracket S^{\prime}
\end{aligned}
$$

Again by induction, for $i=1,2$ we have

$$
a b s_{\tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{i} \rrbracket S \eta\right) \sqsubseteq \nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s} \llbracket E_{i}^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}
$$

Clearly this implies that for $i=1,2$

$$
a b s_{\tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{i} \rrbracket S \eta\right) \sqsubseteq \sqcup_{A}\left(v_{1}, v_{2}\right)
$$

where $v_{1}, v_{2}$ and $A$ are as defined above. But in the case we are considering,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \text { if } \tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta=\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{1} \rrbracket S \eta \text { or } \\
& \mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \text { if } \tau E_{0} E_{1} E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta=\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket E_{2} \rrbracket S \eta
\end{aligned}
$$

It is now obvious from this that the required inequality holds.

$$
\begin{align*}
& a b s_{\tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau} \llbracket \mathrm{fix} \tau E \rrbracket S \eta\right)  \tag{8}\\
&= a b s_{\tau}\left(\bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right)^{n}(\perp)\right) \\
& {[\text { continuity of } a b s] } \\
&= \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty} a b s_{\tau}\left(\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right)^{n}(\perp)\right) \\
& {[\text { property of } a b s] } \\
& \sqsubseteq \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty} a b s_{\tau \rightarrow \tau}\left(\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right)^{n}\right)\left(a b s_{\tau}(\perp)\right) \\
& {[\text { property of } a b s] } \\
& \sqsubseteq \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty}\left(a b s_{\tau \rightarrow \tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right)\right)^{n}\left(a b s_{\tau}(\perp)\right) \\
& {[a b s \text { is strict }] } \\
&= \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty}\left(a b s_{\tau \rightarrow \tau}\left(\mu_{\Gamma, \tau \rightarrow \tau} \llbracket E \rrbracket S \eta\right)\right)^{n}(\perp) \\
& {[\text { inductive hypothesis] }} \\
& \sqsubseteq \bigsqcup_{n=0}^{\infty}\left(\nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s} \tau \rightarrow A b s \tau \llbracket E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}\right)^{n}(\perp) \\
&= \nu_{\Gamma^{\prime}, A b s \tau} \llbracket \text { fix } A b s \tau E^{\prime} \rrbracket S^{\prime} \eta^{\prime}
\end{align*}
$$

(9) Again, we may assume that we do not have let-expressions and expressions of the form $E\left[\tau^{\prime}\right]$.

## Bibliography

[1] S. Abramsky. Strictness Analysis and Polymorphic Invariance. In Programs as Data Objects, LNCS 217 (1985), 1-23.
[2] S. Abramsky. Notes on Strictness Analysis for Polymorphic Functions. Draft paper (1988).
[3] S. Abramsky and C.L. Hankin (eds). Abstract Interpretation of Declarative Languages. Ellis-Horwood (1987).
[4] S. Abramsky. Abstract Interpretation, Logical Relations and Kan Extensions. Journal of Logic and Computation, 1(1) (1990), 5-39.
[5] S. Abramsky and T. Jensen. A Relational Approach to Strictness Analysis for Higher-Order Polymorphic Functions. In Conference Record of the Eighteenth Annual ACM Symposium on Principles of Programming Languages, (1991), 49-54.
[6] G. Baraki. A Note on Abstract Interpretation of Polymorphic Functions. In Functional Programming and Computer Architecture, 5th Conference, LNCS 523 (1991), 367-378.
[7] P.N. Benton. Strictness Logic and Polymorphic Invariance. In Logical Foundations of Computer Science, Second International Symposium, LNCS 620 (1992), 32-44.
[8] G.L. Burn. An Issue to do with Strictness Analysis of Polymorphically Typed Programs. Draft paper (1985).
[9] G.L. Burn. A Relationship Between Abstract Interpretation and Projection Analysis (Extended Abstract). In POPL 90, Conference on Principles of Programming Languages, ACM (1990), 151-156.
[10] G.L. Burn. Lazy Functional Languages: Abstract Interpretation and Compilation. Pitman (1991).
[11] G.L. Burn, C.L. Hankin and S. Abramsky. Strictness Analysis for Higher-Order Functions. Science of Computer Programming, 7 (1986), 249-278.
[12] C. Clack and S. Peyton-Jones. Strictness Analysis - a practical approach. In Functional Programming and Computer Architecture, LNCS 201 (1985), 35-49.
[13] C. Clack and S. Peyton-Jones. Generating Parallelism from Strictness Analysis. In Proceedings of the Workshop on Implementation of Functional Languages, Programming Methodology Group, University of Goteborg and Chalmers University of Technology, Report 17 (1985), 92-131.
[14] T. Coquand. An Introduction to Type Theory. Draft paper (1989).
[15] T. Coquand, C. Gunter, and G. Winskel. Domain Theoretic Models of Polymorphism. Technical Report 116, University of Cambridge (1987).
[16] Y. Fuh and P. Mishra. Type Inference with Subtypes. In ESOP 88, LNCS 300 (1988), 94-114.
[17] J.-Y. Girard. Interprétation Fonctionelle et Elimination des Coupures dans l'Arithmétique d'Ordre Supérieure. PhD thesis, Universite Paris VII, 1972.
[18] P. Hudak et al. Report on the Programming Language Haskell: A Non-Strict, Purely Functional Language, March 1992. Version 1.2. Also in Sigplan Notices, May 1992.
[19] R.J.M. Hughes. Why Functional Programming Matters. Computer Journal, 32(2) (1989), 98-107.
[20] R.J.M. Hughes. Strictness Analysis in Non-flat Domains. In Programs as Data Objects, LNCS 217 (1985), 112-135.
[21] R.J.M. Hughes. Abstract Interpretation of First-Order Polymorphic Functions. In Proceedings of the 1988 Glasgow Workshop on Functional Programming, Research Report 89/R4, University of Glasgow (1989).
[22] R.J.M. Hughes. Backwards Analysis of Functional Programs. Research Report 87/R3, University of Glasgow (1987).
[23] R.J.M. Hughes and J. Launchbury. Projections for Polymorphic Strictness Analysis. Research Report 90/R33, University of Glasgow (1990).
[24] S. Hunt. Frontiers and Open Sets in Abstract Interpretation. In FPCA'89 Conference Proceedings, London, (1989), 1-11.
[25] S. Hunt and C. Hankin. Fixed Points and Frontiers: A New Perspective. Journal of Functional Programming, 1(1) (1991), 91-120.
[26] S. Hunt and D. Sands. Binding Time Analysis: A New PERspective. SIGPLAN Notices, 26(9) (1991), 154-165.
[27] S. Hunt. Abstract Interpretation of Functional Languages: From Theory to Practice. Ph.D. Thesis, Imperial College (1991).
[28] T.P. Jensen. Strictness Analysis in Logical Form. In Functional Programming and Computer Architecture, 5th Conference, LNCS 523 (1991), 352-365.
[29] T.P. Jensen. Disjunctive Strictness. In Logic in Computer Science, Proceedings of the 7th Symposium, Computer Society Press of the IEEE (1992), 174-185.
[30] T.P. Jensen. Abstract Interpretation in Logical Form. Ph.D. Thesis, Imperial College (1992).
[31] S. Kamin. Head-strictness is not a Monotonic Abstract Property. Information Processing Letters, 41 (1992), 195-198.
[32] T. Kuo and P. Mishra. Strictness Analysis : A New Perspective based on Type Inference. In FPCA'89 Conference Proceedings, London, (1989), 260-272.
[33] J. Launchbury. Projection Factorisations in Partial Evaluation. Distinguished Dissertation in Computer Science, Vol 1 (1991), CUP.
[34] C. Martin and C.L. Hankin. Finding Fixed Points in Finite Lattices. In Functional Programming and Computer Architecture, LNCS 274 (1987), 426-445.
[35] R. Milner. A Theory of Type Polymorphism in Programming. Journal of Computer and System Science, 17 (1978), 348-375.
[36] J.C. Mitchell and R. Harper. The Essence of ML. In POPL'88, (1988), 28-46.
[37] A. Mycroft. Abstract Interpretation and Optimising Transformations for Applicative Programs. Ph.D. Thesis, University of Edinburgh (1981).
[38] F. Nielson and H.R. Nielson. The Tensor Product in Wadler's Analysis of Lists. In 4 th Symposium on Programming, Rennes, France. Proceedings. LNCS 582 (1992), 351-370.
[39] A. Ohori. A Simple Semantics for ML Polymorphism. In FPCA'89 Conference Proceedings, London, (1989), 281-292.
[40] G.D. Plotkin. Lambda-definability in the Full Type Hierarchy. In J.P. Seldin and J.R. Hindley, editors, To H.B. Curry: Essays on Combinatory Logic, Lambda Calculus and Formalism. Academic Press (1980), 363-373.
[41] G.D. Plotkin. Lecture Notes in Domain Theory. University of Edinburgh (1981).
[42] J.C. Reynolds. Towards a Theory of Type Structure. In B. Robinet, editor, Proc. Colloque sur la Programmation, LNCS 19 (1974), 408-425.
[43] J.C. Reynolds. Types, Abstraction and Parametric Polymorphism. In Information Processing 83. North Holland (1983), 513-523.
[44] J.C. Reynolds. Polymorphism is not Set-theoretic. In Kahn, MacQueen, and Plotkin, editors, Semantics of Data Types, Sophia-Antipolis, France, LNCS 173 (1984), 145-156.
[45] D. Scott. Data Types as Lattices. SIAM Journal of Computing, 5(3) (1976), 522-587.
[46] P. Sestoft. The Structure of a Self-Applicable Partial Evaluator. In Programs as Data Objects, LNCS 217 (1985), 236-256.
[47] J. Seward. Personal Communication.
[48] J. Seward. Polymorphic Strictness Analysis. Draft paper (1992).
[49] A. Tarski. A Lattice-Theoretic Fixpoint Theorem and its Applications. Pacific Journal of Mathematics, 5 (1955), 285-309.
[50] D.A. Turner. Miranda: A Non-Strict Functional Language with Polymorphic Types. In FPCA'85, Nancy, France, LNCS 201 (1985), 1-16.
[51] P. Wadler and R.J.M. Hughes. Projections for Strictness Analysis. In FPCA'87, Portland, Oregon, LNCS 274 (1987), 385-407.
[52] P. Wadler. Strictness Analysis on Non-Flat Domains by Abstract Interpretation. In S. Abramsky and C. Hankin, editors, Abstract Interpretation of Declarative Languages. Ellis-Horwood (1987), 266-275.
[53] P. Wadler. Theorems for Free! In FPCA'89 Conference Proceedings, London, (1989), 347-359.


[^0]:    ${ }^{\dagger}$ Miranda is a trademark of Research Software Limited.

[^1]:    ${ }^{\dagger}$ It is interesting to note that in [5] also, for the purpose of the proof of invariance, it is assumed that the cpo's used have top elements.

